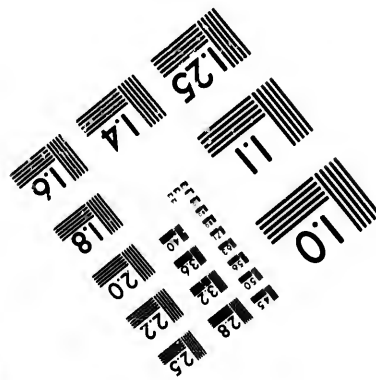
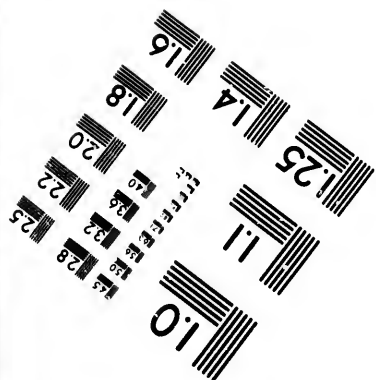
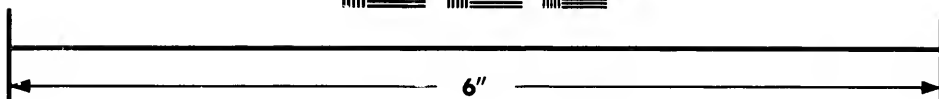
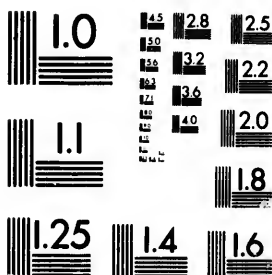


**IMAGE EVALUATION  
TEST TARGET (MT-3)**



**Photographic  
Sciences  
Corporation**

23 WEST MAIN STREET  
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580  
(716) 872-4503

**CIHM/ICMH  
Microfiche  
Series.**

**CIHM/ICMH  
Collection de  
microfiches.**



**Canadian Institute for Historical Microreproductions / Institut canadien de microreproductions historiques**

**© 1982**



The copy filmed here has been reproduced thanks to the generosity of:

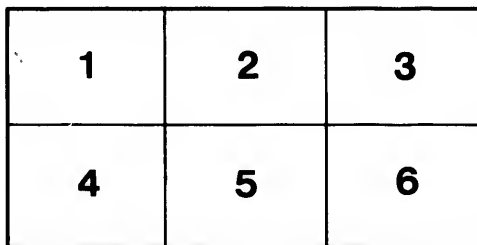
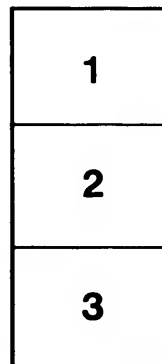
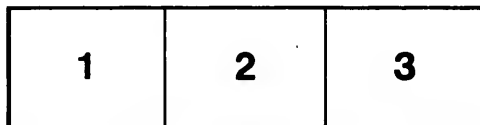
National Library of Canada

The images appearing here are the best quality possible considering the condition and legibility of the original copy and in keeping with the filming contract specifications.

Original copies in printed paper covers are filmed beginning with the front cover and ending on the last page with a printed or illustrated impression, or the back cover when appropriate. All other original copies are filmed beginning on the first page with a printed or illustrated impression, and ending on the last page with a printed or illustrated impression.

The last recorded frame on each microfiche shall contain the symbol  $\rightarrow$  (meaning "CONTINUED"), or the symbol  $\nabla$  (meaning "END"), whichever applies.

Maps, plates, charts, etc., may be filmed at different reduction ratios. Those too large to be entirely included in one exposure are filmed beginning in the upper left hand corner, left to right and top to bottom, as many frames as required. The following diagrams illustrate the method:



L'exemplaire filmé fut reproduit grâce à la générosité de:

Bibliothèque nationale du Canada

Les images suivantes ont été reproduites avec le plus grand soin, compte tenu de la condition et de la netteté de l'exemplaire filmé, et en conformité avec les conditions du contrat de filmage.

Les exemplaires originaux dont la couverture en papier est imprimée sont filmés en commençant par le premier plat et en terminant soit par la dernière page qui comporte une empreinte d'impression ou d'illustration, soit par le second plat, selon le cas. Tous les autres exemplaires originaux sont filmés en commençant par la première page qui comporte une empreinte d'impression ou d'illustration et en terminant par la dernière page qui comporte une telle empreinte.

Un des symboles suivants apparaîtra sur la dernière image de chaque microfiche, selon le cas: le symbole  $\rightarrow$  signifie "A SUIVRE", le symbole  $\nabla$  signifie "FIN".

Les cartes, planches, tableaux, etc., peuvent être filmés à des taux de réduction différents. Lorsque le document est trop grand pour être reproduit en un seul cliché, il est filmé à partir de l'angle supérieur gauche, de gauche à droite, et de haut en bas, en prenant le nombre d'images nécessaire. Les diagrammes suivants illustrent la méthode.

e  
détails  
s du  
modifier  
r une  
Image

s

errata  
to

pelure,  
on à



32X

HIS

Q

FOR

A COMPENDIUM  
OF THE  
**HISTORY OF IRELAND**

BY WAY OF  
**QUESTION AND ANSWER**  
DESIGNED PRINCIPALLY  
**FOR THE USE OF SCHOOLS.**

BY  
**THOMAS J. O'BRIEN.**

" Let Erin remember the days of old,  
Ere her faithless sons betray'd her :  
When Malachi wore the collar of gold,  
Which he won from the proud invader ;  
When her kings, with standard of green uncurl'd  
Led the Red-Branch knights to danger ;  
Ere the emerald gem of the western world  
Was set in the crown of a stranger." **MOORE,**

---

QUEBEC :  
**PRINTED BY ELZÉAR VINCENT,**  
No. 224, St. John Street.

1880.

---

ENTERED, according to Act of the Parliament of  
Canada, in the year one thousand eight hundred  
and eighty, by THOMAS J. O'BRIEN, in the Office  
of the Minister of Agriculture.

---

## PREFACE.

---

At no previous period, perhaps, was the study of Irish History of more importance than at the present; a compendium, therefore, of the history of Ireland for the use of schools, cannot prove otherwise than acceptable to those charged with the instruction of youth.

The history of each nation has its useful and instructive lessons. This is true especially of that of Ireland, on account of her ancient renown, her unshaken faith, and the part she has taken in the affairs of the world. Yet, perhaps, there is no other country of equal importance, about which men know so little. Even her own children are actuated mostly by sentiment in regard to her, and are almost wholly destitute of that accurate knowledge which inspires, true patriotism and transmits the glorious qualities of her children, who were giants in intellect, virtue, and valor for 1500 years before Alfred the Saxon sent the youth of his country to her Schools in search of knowledge, with which to civilize his people.

The English and Scotch are well read in the histories of their country. The Irish are, unfortunately, not so; and yet, what is English or Scottish history to compare with Irish? Ireland was a land of saints and scholars when Britons were painted savages. Wise and noble laws, based upon the spirit of Christianity, were administered in Erin, and valuable books were written ere the Britons were as far advanced in civilization as the Blackfoot Indians. In morals and intellect, in Christianity and civilization, in arms, art, and science, Ireland shone like a star among the nations. And she nobly sustained civilization and religion by her missionaries and scholars, who went forth from her bosom to distant regions to raise the standard of the cross over



the ruinous structures of error and superstition. Irish steel glittered in the front rank of the most desperate conflicts on the war-fields of Europe, and more than once the ranks of England went down before the brave "Exiles of Erin," in just punishment for the terrible penal code which excluded the Irish soldier from his country's service.

The object of this little volume is to give the outlines of Ireland's history—to tell of her traditions and her heroes, her glories and her sorrows, and thus, if possible, to lead the Irish youth who are scattered over this vast and enlightened Continent, to admire this long afflicted land of their forefathers—the land of saints and warriors, of poets, statesmen, and orators.

The plan of the work is simple and partly new; it is given to the pupil in the form in which, as I hope, it will be most easily understood and remembered. The catechetical form of instruction is now admitted by experienced teachers, to be the best adapted to the nature and capacity of children—a system by which they will acquire a knowledge of a science in less time than by any other.

As an introductory work, the following compendium will be found to possess many advantages, particularly for that class of learners for which it is designed. It presents to the minds of the young a clear and concise view of the most interesting and important events of the history of Ireland, and will I trust, supply a want much felt in our Irish Catholic schools and academies.

In conclusion I may add, that my best wishes for the success of this little volume, are that its pages may spread as far and wide as the Irish race itself, and that they may be read with the same care and in the same spirit as those in which they were compiled.

Quebec Jan. 17th 1830.

## INTRODUCTION.

---

**Q. What is History ?**

**A. History is a written narrative of past events.**

**Q. How is History divided ?**

**A. History is divided into two parts viz : Ancient and Modern ; these are also subdivided, into Sacred Profane, Ecclesiastical, and Civil History.**

**Q. What do you understand by Ancient History ?**

**A. Ancient History, is an account of the principal events, that have taken place, from the Creation to the birth of Christ.**

**Q. What is Modern History ?**

**A. Modern History embraces an account of all events, from the birth of Christ to the present time.**

**Q. What is Sacred History ?**

**A. Sacred History is that contained in the Sacred Scriptures.**

**Q. What is Profane History ?**

**A. Profane History is the history of the ancient heathen nations.**

**Q. What is Ecclesiastical History ?**

**A. Ecclesiastical History is the history of the Christian Church.**

**Q. What is Civil History ?**

**A. Civil History is an account of the rise, continuance, and fall of empires, kingdoms, and states.**

Q. Wherein are contained the most ancient events ?

A. The most ancient events are contained in the Old Testament ; this admirable book gives an account of the Creation of the world, the fall of our first Parents, &c.

Q. How many years from the Creation of the world to the birth of Christ ?

A. It is commonly said to be four thousand and four years.

Q. How is Ancient History distinguished ?

A. It is distinguished by the rise and fall of the four great Empires : Assyria, Persia, Greece and Rome.

Q. For what is Modern History distinguished ?

A. Modern History is distinguished for the invention of gunpowder, the art of printing, and the discovery of America.

Q. What are the Middle Ages ?

A. The Middle Ages embrace a period, extending from the decline of the Western Empire of the Romans, to the fall of the Eastern Empire.

Q. How are the Middle Ages distinguished ?

A. They are distinguished by the rise of Mahometanism, the Feudal System, Crusades, and Chivalry.

---

nt  
he  
an  
our  
the  
and  
the  
and  
l?  
in-  
the  
ing  
the  
om-  
his-

A COMPENDIUM  
OF THE  
HISTORY OF IRELAND

---

CHAPTER I.

Of the Original Inhabitants of Ireland.

Q. What is said of the early history of Ireland?

A. It is greatly involved in obscurity.

Q. What has it afforded?

A. A subject of research for antiquaries for nearly two centuries.

Q. From whom did the first inhabitants of Ireland descend?

A. According to the best authorities, they descended from the Celts, who were the first to people the western part of Europe.

Q. How does this fact appear probable?

A. From the striking similarity between their modes of worship.

Q. What else?

A. From their objects of adoration, and their language.

Q. By consulting the ancient authors, what appears reasonable?

A. That while England was peopled from the

coast of Gaul, Ireland received her population directly from the shores of Celtic Spain.

Q. What is certain ?

A. It is certain that relations of affinity had been established at an early period between Ireland and the western coast of Spain.

Q. What is admitted ?

A. That Ireland was inhabited at a very remote period of antiquity.

Q. What do some historians say ?

A. That Ireland appears to have been inhabited as far back as 3040, before our era.

Q. At what time did Miletius with a colony arrive in Ireland ?

A. About the year 1300 before the Christian era.

Q. Who was Miletius ?

A. He was a celebrated hero of the Scythic race.

Q. By what name were they known, who accompanied him ?

A. They were called Phœnicians.

Q. Who were the Phœnicians ?

A. They were also a branch of the great Scythian nation.

Q. From whence did they sail for Ireland ?

A. Directly from the coast of Spain.

Q. What was the religion of the early inhabitants ?

A. It was similar to that of nearly all the Eastern nations.

Q. What was their chief object of adoration ?

A. The sun under the name of Baal or Bel.

Q. What else did they adore ?

A. They adored the moon under the title of Re.

Q. Did they adore any other object ?

A. Yes, they adored fire.

Q. What feast did they annually celebrate ?

A. The great festival of Baal-fire.

Q. What was prohibited during the festival ?

A. It was forbidden to light a fire under pain of death.

Q. What was commanded ?

A. To extinguish all the fires in every district of Ireland.

Q. When were they permitted to rekindle them ?

A. After the pile of the sacrifice on the hill of Tara was kindled.

Q. What was associated with fire worship ?

A. The worship of water was usually associated with fire.

Q. Hence what do we find ?

A. We find that certain wells, fountains, and groves, were held sacred by the Irish.

Q. What is said of their priests ?

A. Their priests were held in the greatest veneration, and on account of their learning were called Magi or Druids.

---

## CHAPTER II.

**Early Division of Ireland.—Her Constitution and Laws.**

Q. How was Ireland divided ?

A. Ireland was divided into a number of small principalities.

Q. By whom were they governed ?

A. Each was governed by a king, and the whole subordinate to a supreme monarch.

Q. What is said of each subordinate prince ?

A. He assumed the title of king, and exercised within his own dominions all the powers of Sovereignty.

Q. What is said of the right of primogeniture ?

A. To the right of primogeniture, so generally acknowledged in those ages, no regard was paid to it by the Irish.

Q. What is said of the chief monarch ?

A. The chief monarch, was not only chosen by election, but previous to his death a successor was appointed.

Q. What may we infer from this state of affairs ?

A. We may easily infer that discord often prevailed.

Q. Why did discord often arise ?

A. Because the manner of election was badly arranged, or designed for the preservation of order.

Q. By what law were those elections regulated ?

A. By the law of Tanistry.

Q. What did the law of Tanistry restrict ?

A. The right of succession to the family of the prince or chief.

Q. What did this law admit ?

A. The right of succession to any member of the family, as well as, the eldest son.

Q. What was the title of the elected successor, during the life of the reigning chief ?

A. He bore the name of Tanist.

Q. What qualities should a Tanist possess ?

A. He should be a knight twenty-five years old.

Q. What other qualities were required ?

A. His figure should be tall and free from blemish.

Q. From whom should he prove his pedigree ?

A. He had to prove his pedigree from the Milesians.

Q. Was Tanistry a good custom ?

A. No, for the struggles of the different candidates seeking to be elected, sometimes caused war and bloodshed.

Q. Where did the king-paramount of all Ireland reside ?

A. At the palace of Tara in Meath.

Q. What was the ancient law of Ireland called ?

A. It was called the Brehon Law.

Q. What was remarkable in the Brehon Law ?

A. The total absence of capital punishment.

Q. How was the crime of murder punished ?

A. By a money fine called an *eric*.



Q. How were men appointed to the office of Brehon ?

A. The office of Brehon was hereditary in certain families.

Q. What does the word Brehon mean ?

A. Brehon is the modern Irish for judge.

Q. Can you state any ancient custom of those early times, which still exists in Ireland ?

A. Yes, the custom of *fostering*.

Q. What is meant by the custom of *fostering* ?

A. That the children of the chiefs and nobles were nursed by the wives of their tenants.

Q. Was the tie of friendship thus formed, considered strong ?

A. Yes, as strong as the tie of actual relationship.

Q. What is said of foster brothers and sisters ?

A. They often loved each other better than if they had been children of the same father and mother.

Q. Can you mention any other ancient custom ?

A. Yes ; that of *gossipred*, that is the chiefs and nobles frequently became godfathers to the children of their vassals and dependants.

Q. Had these old customs any good effects ?

A. Yes ; they had.—

Q. How so ?

A. Because they helped in some degree, to connect different classes in the bonds of affection and friendship.

Q. Are there any remains of ancient Irish buildings?

A. Yes; there are fifty-two round towers of very great antiquity.

Q. What were the origin and purpose of those buildings?

A. Both their origin and purpose are unknown.

Q. What is the general opinion of antiquaries?

A. That they were intended for the fire-worship of the pagans, before Christianity was introduced into Ireland.

Q. What do some assert?

A. That they belong to Christian ages.

Q. On what do they ground their belief?

A. That these towers are generally connected with the ruins of Christian churches and monasteries.

Q. What else?

A. That their style of architecture belongs to Christian times.

Q. For what do they say, they were used?

A. As belfries.

---

### CHAPTER III.

#### First Ages.

Q. What are we informed by the Irish annalists?

A. The Irish annalists inform us, that King Kim-

boath who occupied the throne two centuries before the Christian era, was the seventy-fifth king of Ireland.

Q. What name is most distinguished ?

A. Among the long list of kings who have passed like a shadow through this dim period of Ireland's history, the name of Ollam Fodhla is the most distinguished.

Q. For what is he distinguished ?

A. He is distinguished as an eminent legislator.

Q. What rendered his reign so remarkable ?

A. The establishment of a Triennial Parliament at Tara.

Q. In these assemblies, what do we observe ?

A. We observe a near approach to a representative form of government.

Q. Who were the leading members ?

A. They were the king, druids, and plebeians.

Q. For what did they assemble ?

A. To pass such laws and regulations, as the public good required.

Q. What offices were transferred hereditary ?

A. They were those of heralds, bards, and musicians.

Q. What did King Ollam assign to those professors ?

A. He assigned lands for their use.

Q. What did he establish at Tara ?

A. A school of general instruction which afterwards became celebrated, under the name of Mur-Ollam-ham, or college of the learned.

Q. At the beginning of the Christian era, who occupied the throne?

A. King Conary the Great, occupied the throne.

Q. Who was one of the most illustrious monarchs of Ireland?

A. Cormac Ulfadah.

Q. For what is Ireland indebted to him?

A. For the foundation of three academies at Tara.

Q. What was taught in the first?

A. The science of war was taught in the first.

Q. What was taught in the second academy?

A. Historical literature was taught in the second.

Q. To what was the third devoted?

A. The third was devoted to the culture of jurisprudence.

Q. Under Cormac's auspices, what took place?

A. A general revision of the annals of the kingdom.

Q. What else?

A. The national records preserved in the Psalter of Tara since the time of the illustrious Ollam, were corrected and improved.

Q. What ancient custom is mentioned in the Psalter?

A. That no one who was affected with any personal blemish could retain the crown.

Q. What happened to Cormac?

A. In defending his palace against a rebellious attack he incurred the loss of an eye.

Q. Was King Cormac thereby disqualified for retaining the crown ?

A. Yes ; he was disqualified.

Q. What was Cormac obliged to do ?

A. He was obliged to abdicate the throne.

Q. In what year did he abdicate ?

A. In the year A. D. 266.

Q. How long did Cormac reign ?

A. He reigned forty years.

Q. How did Cormac govern the nation ?

A. With wisdom and justice.

Q. Where did he retire after abdicating the throne ?

A. He retired to an humble cottage.

Q. To what did Cormac devote himself ?

A. He devoted himself to literary pursuits.

Q. By whom was he succeeded ?

A. He was succeeded by his son.

Q. Does history record any remarkable event after Cormac's abdication ?

A. History is almost silent, as to the events which took place during the two following centuries.

Q. What King of Ireland distinguished himself towards the end of the fourth century ?

A. King Niall, called " Niall of the Nine Hostages. "

Q. How did he distinguish himself ?

A. By his daring incursions into England and Gaul.

Q. What was the custom of the victors ?

A. Their custom was to carry their captives into slavery.

Q. On one occasion who was among Niall's captives ?

A. The youthful Patrick.

Q. How did King Niall end his life ?

A. He was slain in his third incursion into Gaul.

Q. In what year did his death occur ?

A. In the year A. D. 405.

Q. Who was his successor ?

A. His Nephew, Dathy.

Q. What is said of Dathy ?

A. It is said that he was the last pagan king of Ireland.

Q. What happened to Dathy in one of his incursions into Gaul ?

A. He was killed by lightning at the foot of the Alps.

Q. Did Dathy possess the warlike qualities of his uncle ?

A. Yes; in an eminent degree.

---

#### CHAPTER IV.

##### Saint Patrick Apostle of Ireland.

Q. Who was the great Apostle of Ireland ?

A. The illustrious Saint Patrick.

Q. Where was he born ?

A. At Boulogne, in Armoric Gaul, in the year 390.

Q. What happened to him in his youth ?

A. He was taken captive to Ireland.

Q. What is said of him while in Ireland ?

A. He was sold to a man named Milcho.

Q. How did this man employ him ?

A. He employed him in tending his flocks.

Q. At the end of six years of captivity, what did Patrick obtain ?

A. He obtained his release.

Q. In what manner did he obtain it ?

A. A voice announced to him in sleep that he would soon go to his own country.

Q. What did the voice a second time say to him ?

A. That there was a ship ready for him.

Q. What does Saint Patrick tell us ?

A. He tells us that the ship was about two hundred miles off.

Q. What does he further relate ?

A. That he was moved by a divine inspiration, to direct his course towards the ship.

Q. Of what was he informed on his arrival ?

A. That the ship would sail that day.

Q. For what did he apply to the master of the vessel ?

A. He applied to him for a passage.

Q. Was he favorably received by the captain ?

A. No ; he was not.

Q. What did the captain say to him ?

A. He said: "Do not attempt to come on board."

Q. On hearing this, where was Patrick about to retire?

A. To the house where he had been received as a guest.

Q. On his way thither, what did he do?

A. He began to pray to God for aid.

Q. Before he had finished his prayer, what did he hear?

A. "I heard," said he, "one of the men calling after me."

Q. What did this man exclaim?

A. Come, come quickly, for they want you.

Q. What did Patrick do?

A. He returned to the ship.

Q. What did the captain say to him?

A. He said: "Come in, I will receive thee."

Q. What does the Saint tell us?

A. He tells us that they then set sail, and after three days reached land.

Q. On what coast did they land?

A. They landed on the coast of Brittany, some distance from Patrick's native town.

Q. How does he describe the coast on which they landed?

A. He tells us that it was wild and desolate.

Q. To what were they exposed after having escaped the perils of the sea?

A. They were in danger of perishing from hunger.



Q. How many days had they to travel through a desert place.

A. Twenty-eight days.

Q. Their provisions having failed, what prevailed?

A. Hunger prevailed among them.

Q. What did the master of the ship say to Patrick?

A. He said, Christian, pray to your All-powerful God for us, for we are in danger of perishing by hunger.

Q. What did St. Patrick recommend them to do?

A. He recommended them to put their trust in God, and He would send them provisions.

Q. What took place?

A. A large herd of swine appeared at a distance.

Q. What did they do?

A. They killed as many as they needed.

Q. Having stopped two days to refresh themselves, what did they do?

A. They returned thanks to God, and set out on their journey.

Q. How did they regard Saint Patrick?

A. With great reverence and respect.

Q. How was Patrick received on his return home?

A. He was joyfully received by his family and friends.

Q. How did they regard him?

A. They looked on him as one risen from the dead.

Q. Why so ?

A. Because they thought he was dead.

Q. What did his aged parents request of him ?

A. That he would not leave them any more.

Q. After spending some time with his parents, where did he retire ?

A. To the celebrated monastery of St. Martin, near Tours.

Q. What was his object in retiring to this monastery ?

A. His object was to study for the priesthood.

Q. How long did he remain in this monastery ?

A. He remained four years.

Q. What did he receive there ?

A. He received the clerical tonsure, and minor orders.

---

## CHAPTER V.

### Saint Patrick is called by the Irish.

Q. What did Saint Patrick behold one night in a vision ?

A. He tells us that he saw a man whose name was Victricious, coming from Hibernia.

Q. What did he see with Victricious ?

A. He saw him with a great number of letters.

Q. What are his own words about the letters ?

A. He says : " Victricious handed one of the letters to me."

Q. What did he read on opening it?

A. "I read," says he, "these peculiar words: *The voice of the Irish.*"

Q. On reading the letter, what did he seem to hear?

A. St. Patrick says, "I thought I heard the voice of persons from the western coast of Ireland."

Q. What did the voice say?

A. The voice said, "We entreat thee holy youth, to come and henceforth dwell with us."

Q. What effect had this vision on the holy youth?

A. He says: "I was greatly affected in my heart, and could read no longer and immediately I awoke."

Q. After leaving the monastery of St. Martin, under whose guidance did he go?

A. Under the guidance of St. Germanus.

Q. After spending some years with St. Germanus, where did he visit?

A. By his master's advice, he visited the Island of Lerins.

Q. What is said of the saint, while at Lerins?

A. That he visited many monasteries, and holy hermits on the neighboring islands.

Q. What renowned person lived on one of those islands?

A. A holy hermit named Justus.

Q. What does the annalist state about the holy hermit Justus?

A. The annalist states that, he was just in name and works.

Q. How did Justus receive our saint ?

A. He received him with profound respect.

Q. What did he place in the hands of St. Patrick ?

A. He placed in his hands a staff.

Q. Whom did Justus say gave him that staff ?

A. He said that Jesus gave him that staff to give to St. Patrick.

Q. What did St. Patrick do ?

A. He returned thanks to God, and remained some time with the holy hermit.

Q. On his departure, what did he take with him ?

A. He carried with him the staff of Jesus ?

Q. Who states these facts regarding the staff ?

A. Many Irish historians mention this celebrated staff ?

Q. What does St. Bernard say of this staff ?

A. He says, that it was one of the insignia of the See of Armagh.

Q. What else does he say about it ?

A. He says though at first but a simple staff, in his time it was adorned with gold and precious stones.

Q. What do most writers call St. Patrick's staff ?

A. They call it a crozier.

Q. How was it preserved ?

A. It was preserved with religious veneration among the relics of St. Patrick, at Armagh.

**Q.** What do we read of the staff, in the **Annals of the Four Masters**?

**A.** We read that it was often used as a sacred bond in treaties of peace.

**Q.** How did the early Anglo-Irish respect the staff of Jesus?

**A.** They looked on it as a sacred relic, on which they used to swear to contracts, treaties &c.

**Q.** How was the violation of such an oath looked upon?

**A.** A violation of the oath was looked on as fatal to the perjurer.

**Q.** What is to be seen in the Chapter-House, Westminster Abbey?

**A.** A paper containing an examination of Sir Gerald Maeshayne sworn, March 19, 1529, upon the Holy Mass Book and the great relic of Ireland, called the staff of Jesus, in the presence of the King's Deputy, Chancellor, Treasurer and Justice.

**Q.** From these testimonies, what do we infer?

**A.** That the staff of Jesus was held and venerated as a sacred relic.

**Q.** In what year was the staff taken from St. Patrick's Church, Armagh?

**A.** It was carried away in the year 1178.

**Q.** By whom was it taken?

**A.** It was taken by the English.

**Q.** Where did they place it?

**A.** They placed it in Trinity Church, Dublin.

**Q.** What happened to this sacred staff?

A. The reformers burned it with other sacred relics in the reign of Henry VIII.

Q. To whom did St. Patrick return after leaving the Isle of Lerins ?

A. He returned to St. Germanus.

Q. In what did St. Patrick perfect himself, under this saintly guide ?

A. He perfected himself in the art of governing souls.

Q. Whom did he accompany into Britain ?

A. He accompanied SS. Germanus and Lupus.

Q. What was their intention in going into Britain ?

A. Their intention was, to combat the Pelagian heresy.

Q. While there, what did St. Patrick enquire into ?

A. He enquired into the state of Ireland.

Q. Who was the first Christian bishop sent to Ireland.

A. Saint Palladius.

Q. By whom was he sent ?

A. By Pope Celestine, in the year 430.

Q. Who is the earliest chronicler of this fact ?

A. Saint Prosper who wrote in the year 434.

Q. What are the words of Saint Prosper ?

A. "By Pope Celestine is Palladius ordained, and sent the first bishop, to the Irish."

Q. Did Saint Palladius succeed in his mission ?

A. No ; he was unsuccessful.

Q. Whence did Ireland receive her Christianity ?

A. Directly from Rome.

Q. How far back can we trace a connection between the Irish and Roman Christians ?

A. We can trace it back as early as the year

A. D. 360.

Q. There were Christians in Ireland, then, before St. Palladius ?

A. Yes; a small number.

Q. By whom had that small number been first taught the faith ?

A. By a Roman priest who visited Ireland in 360.

---

## CHAPTER VI.

### St. Patrick sent as Bishop to Ireland.

Q. On the death of Palladius, who was selected as his successor ?

A. St. Patrick was appointed by Pope Celestine I.

Q. In what year did St. Patrick arrive in Ireland as bishop ?

A. In the year 432, the first year of the Pontificate of Sixtus III. successor of Celestine.

Q. What did St. Patrick behold, on nearing the Irish coast ?

A. He beheld legions of demons ready to oppose his landing.

Q. Who states this fact ?

A. This remarkable fact is related by Jocelyn, the historian.

Q. What did St. Patrick do ?

A. He made the sign of the cross, invoked the assistance of God and the demons fled.

Q. In what part of Ireland did St. Patrick land ?

A. He landed with his companions near the present Lough Strangford, on the coast of Down.

Q. Having penetrated some distance into the country whom did he meet ?

A. He met a chief named Dicho.

Q. After a brief conversation, what did Dicho do ?

A. He invited the saint and his companions into his house.

Q. What took place during this visit ?

A. Dicho and his household received the grace of baptism.

Q. Who was the first to erect a Christian Church under the direction of St. Patrick ?

A. It was Dicho, who was also his first convert.

Q. What was founded there later ?

A. A monastery was founded there by the saint.

Q. Whither did St. Patrick next direct his course ?

A. He next set out for the abode of his old master.

Q. What is said of Milcho on hearing of the arrival of St. Patrick ?



A. It is said that in a fit of passion, he set fire to his house and perished in the flames.

Q. What did St. Patrick deplore ?

A. He deplored the miserable end of his old master.

Q. What did St. Patrick next determine ?

A. To strike at the stronghold of paganism.

Q. To accomplish this design, what did he resolve ?

A. He resolved to attend the great festival of the king and nobles at Tara.

Q. At what time was the festival held ?

A. It was held about Easter time.

Q. What did the saint think would be the result if he were successful ?

A. That it would have a great effect on the whole kingdom.

Q. On his way to Tara where did St. Patrick lodge ?

A. He lodged at the house of a man named Segnan.

Q. How was St. Patrick received ?

A. He and his companions were cordially received.

Q. How did God reward this man and his family for their hospitality ?

A. God rewarded them with the grace of faith and baptism.

Q. Where did St. Patrick and his companions pitch their tent on Easter-Eve ?

A. On the hill of Bregia, in view of the royal palace.

Q. What was forbidden during the ceremonies of the pagan feast ?

A. It was forbidden to light a fire within the province.

Q. What did St. Patrick do ?

A. He lit a blazing fire in front of his tent.

Q. What effect had St. Patrick's fire on the members of the royal court ?

A. It caused great consternation in the royal court at Tara.

Q. What did the druids inform the king ?

A. That the person who lighted yonder fire, would with his followers reign over the whole island.

Q. What did the king do ?

A. He despatched messengers to bring St. Patrick before him.

Q. What did the king command ?

A. That no one should presume to rise from his seat, or pay the intruder any respect.

Q. Was the king's command obeyed ?

A. No; Erc, the son of Deago, ventured to disobey him ?

Q. What did this young noble do ?

A. He arose and offered his seat to the holy missionary.

Q. How did God reward him for this act of respect ?

A. God rewarded him with the grace of conver-

sion, and after some time he was consecrated Bishop of Slane, by St. Patrick.

---

## CHAPTER VII.

### St. Patrick Preaches Christianity at Tara.

Q. What did the holy missionary proclaim to the king and nobles ?

A. He proclaimed the truths of Christianity.

Did St. Patrick's preaching produce any effect on the king ?

A. Yes ; it made such an impression on him, that he permitted the saint to preach his new doctrine, without opposition.

Q. How did God bless the zeal of our saint ?

A. By the conversion of the queen and many of the nobles.

Q. Who made the greatest opposition to this holy doctrine ?

A. The pagan priests, who were called druids.

Q. For what were the druids remarkable ?

A. They were remarkable for their profound learning and solid reason.

Q. To what point of doctrine did they object ?

A. They objected to the Mystery of the Blessed Trinity.

Q. In what was their reasoning deficient on this point ?

A. They could not understand how three persons could be but one God.

Q. What did St. Patrick do by way of illustration ?

A. He held up to their view a *three-leaved shamrock*, as an emblem of the Unity and Trinity of God.

Q. How did the saint explain it ?

A. "Behold," said he, "this little *spring*, how three make but one, and one in three."

Q. Did this illustration produce the desired effect ?

A. Yes ; they believed in the Blessed Trinity.

Q. The *shamrock* immortalized by this event, what has it become ?

A. It has become to every true Irishman an emblem of his faith.

Q. Did the saint and his companions continue the good work commenced ?

A. They did, with untiring zeal and perseverance.

Q. What is remarkable about the conversion of Ireland ?

A. That the Gospel which elsewhere was drenched in the blood of millions, made a peaceful entry into Ireland.

Q. What do we find in the chivalrous nature of the Irish at this early period ?

A. We find they fostered the spirit of toleration to an extent, that might have shamed nations of a more enlightened period.

Q. What did the monarch and nobles permit ?

A. They permitted the spread of the Gospel, without molestation or restriction.

Q. What must be admitted ?

A. That the conduct of the pagan Irish was far different from that, of the Christian reformers of Ireland, a few centuries ago.

Q. What was the conduct of the so-called Christian reformers ?

A. It was diabolical, when compared with that of the Irish in pagan times.

Q. How did those English reformers treat the religion of St. Patrick ?

A. They proscribed it and put its followers to death, by the rack, the torture, and the gibbet.

Q. What did the career of St. Patrick, in the conversion of Ireland, resemble ?

A. It resembled more the triumphant progress of a beloved king, than the difficult labors of a missionary.

Q. In what condition did St. Patrick find Ireland ?

A. He found her universally Pagan, and left her universally Christian.

Q. What glorious titles have been conferred on Ireland ?

A. She is called the Island of saints and doctors.

---

## CHAPTER VIII.

## The Labors of St. Patrick Among the Irish.

Q. How many years did St. Patrick labor among the Irish ?

A. He labored zealously during 61 years.

.Q What do his biographers state ?

A. That he consecrated 700 bishops and ordained 3000 priests.

Q. What else do they relate of him ?

A. They tell us he founded 700 religious houses, where the brave sons, and the fair and pure daughters of Erin consecrated themselves to God, in holy retirement.

Q. Did the faith of St. Patrick remain ?

A. Yes ; that lamp of *Faith*, enkindled by St. Patrick in the hearts of the Irish, still shines as brilliantly as ever.

Q. Do not the blasts of infidelity dim its brilliant glare ?

A. No ; on the contrary, it shines out more brilliantly in those rude blasts, which infidelity meant for its extinction.

Q. Of what can Ireland justly boast ?

A. That, to none of her sons, can the foul epithet of "heresiarch" be applied.

Q. What did Ireland become ?

A. She became the nursery of saints and the refuge of science.

Q. What went hand in hand, in Ireland ?

A. Sanctity and science.

Q. What were her two most ardent passions ?

A. Her two most ardent passions were to learn and teach.

Q. Where and when did St Patrick die ?

A. In Ireland on the 17th of March A. D. 493. St. Patrick breathed his last, in the monastery of Saull, erected on the site of the *barn*, where he had said his first mass.

Q. Where was Saint Patrick buried ?

A. He was buried, with national honors, in the Church of Armagh.

Q. How old was he when he died ?

A. He was 103 years old.

Q. How is the day of his death held among the Irish ?

A. In grateful remembrance, by the sons of Erin, no matter in what part of the globe, fortune may have cast them.

Q. What is St. Patrick said to have done ?

A. He is said to have banished all serpents and other noxious animals, from the country.

Q. What is certain with regard to them ?

A. It is certain that they will not live in Ireland at the present time.

Q. What countries have her missionaries penetrated ?

A. Her missionaries have penetrated every country on the globe.

Q. A glance at the history of Ireland, and what do we see ?

A. We see what the children of St. Patrick have done for Catholicity, throughout the world.

Q. Turning over the pages of the history of Europe, what do we read ?

A. We read of the great zeal of Irish missionaries, in sowing the seed of the Gospel truths, which has ripened everywhere into perennial harvests.

Q. What are the words of an eminent writer, (T. D. Mc. Gee) on the subject ?

A. He says, "whilst the Gothic tempest was trampling down Christian civilization, the Irish missionaries were everywhere planting in the loosened soil, the Christian tree of life."

Q. What has Ireland for centuries proved to be ?

A. She has proved herself to be for centuries, what she is to day, the brightest *gem* in the Church's diadem.

---

## CHAPTER IX.

### The Schools of Ireland.

Q. What do historians tell us about the schools of Ireland during the sixth, seventh, and eight centuries ?

A. They tell us that they were asylums of deep learning, and true Christian devotion.



Q. With whom were they filled ?

A. They were filled with scholars and saints, whose writings now adorn the most magnificent libraries of Europe.

Q. What else do historians tell us of the Irish schools ?

A. They tell us that men desirous of excelling in either science or virtue, hastened to her shores to drink of those fountains of knowledge and piety.

Q. What did the founders of universities and colleges in other countries, do ?

A. They placed Irish professors at the head of their Institutions.

Q. How many students were there at one time, in the College of Armagh ?

A. There were at one time 7000 students, in this College.

Q. Was this the only University worthy of note, in the country ?

A. No : numerous schools and colleges studded the whole Island, like so many precious gems.

Q. What is said of the fame of those institutions ?

A. The fame of those institutions spread into foreign countries.

Q. Who flocked to those schools in quest of knowledge ?

A. Numbers of youth from all parts of Europe, came to Ireland to study in her schools.

Q. To where were Irish scholars invited ?

**A.** Irish scholars were invited to impart instruction in foreign countries.

**Q.** What universities did the Irish scholars found ?

**A.** Those of Paris and Pavia.

**Q.** When were they established ?

**A.** In the time of the Emperor Charlemagne.

**Q.** Give the name of the founders ?

**A.** Clement and Albin.

**Q.** What do annalists say of them ?

**A.** They tell us that in the year 792, when learning was almost everywhere lost, two men from Ireland landed in France.

**Q.** Seeing the people busy in buying and selling, what did they do ?

**A.** They went through the streets crying aloud, "If any body wants wisdom, let him come to us and receive it, for we have it to sell."

**Q.** What did the people on hearing these words ?

**A.** They were astonished and thought them mad.

**Q.** What did Charlemagne, on hearing of this ?

**A.** He sent for them, and found them very learned.

**Q.** How did he testify his appreciation, of their great knowledge ?

**A.** He patronized them and several of their countrymen.

**Q.** What other foundations were made by Irishmen outside their own country ?

**A.** Irish monks had established about this time,

twelve monasteries in England, thirteen in Scotland, nine in Belgium, nineteen in France, ten in Alsace, seven in Lorraine, sixteen in Bavaria, six in Italy, and fifteen in Switzerland and Thuringia.

Q. Mention the most famous of these ?

A. Iona in Scotland, Glastonbury, Malmesbury and Lindisfarne in England ; Luxeuil and Fontaine in France ; St. Gall in Switzerland ; Ratſbon in Germany ; and Bobbio in Italy.

Q. What do we see in the reign of Charles the Bald ?

A. We see that John Scotus Erigena, a learned Irish scholar, was made the intimate companion of that Monarch.

Q. What must be admitted ?

A. That the 300 years which followed the demise of St. Patrick, are the brightest on the pages of Ireland's history.

Q. At the close of the seventh century, what was apparent ?

A. Dark clouds were gathering on the horizon, the scourge of the Northmen was soon to be upon her.

---

## CHAPTER X.

### Invasion of Ireland by the Danes.

Q. At what period did the Danes appear ?

A. As early as the year 790, the Danes appeared in the Irish seas.

Q. Who were the Danes ?

A. They were a set of cruel, homeless, adventurers, from Denmark and Norway.

Q. What kind of life did they lead ?

A. They led an irregular seafaring life, and rested their hopes of subsistence principally, upon rapine and violence.

Q. How were they armed ?

A. They carried either a heavy battle-axe and a two-edged sword, or a long bow and javelin, together with a large shield.

Q. What was their sole object in coming to Ireland ?

A. Their sole object was plunder.

Q. Being the inveterate enemies of Christianity, against what were their principal attacks directed ?

A. Their principal attacks were directed against the monasteries and churches.

Q. What does history tell us of the churches and monasteries of Ireland ?

A. That they were very richly endowed, for Irish piety then, as now, deemed it could never give enough to God.

Q. What is said of their shrines ?

A. Their shrines were adorned with jewels, purchased with the wealth which the monks had renounced.

Q. What is said of the sacred vessels ?

A. The sacred vessels were costly, being the gifts of generous hearts.

Q. How did the Danes commence their career in Ireland ?

A. By plunder and devastation, and putting to death both clergy and laity.

Q. Becoming emboldened by success, what did they do ?

A. They marched inland, plundering and burning all before them.

Q. During the year 812 and 813, what did they do ?

A. They made raids in Connaught and Munster.

Q. What did they encounter on their march ?

A. They encountered strong resistance from the Irish.

Q. How long did this predatory and murderous warfare continue ?

A. During thirty years.

Q. Could not the Irish impede their progress ?

A. Yes; if they were united, they could easily have drive them out of the the country.

Q. Did the Danes soon become powerful ?

A. Yes; in a short time they overran the country.

Q. Who had himself proclaimed king ?

A. Turgesius, a Norwegian prince.

Q. What city did he make his capital ?

A. The city of Armagh.

Q. How was he thus enabled to establish himself ?

A. Through the disputes and divisions of the Irish chieftains.

Q. If the Irish chiefs were united, what would have been the result ?

A. The result would have been the expulsion of the invaders from their country.

Q. What useful lesson do we learn from this fact?

A. That Ireland can never be great, prosperous, and free ; so long as her people are divided among themselves,

Q. Was the reign of Turgesius of long duration ?

A. No ; he was soon cut off by the contrivance of an Irish prince.

Q. What followed ?

A. The Irish revolted against the Danes.

Q. Were the Irish princes united on this occasion ?

A. Yes ; and consequently they drove the invaders from the interior of the country.

Q. Of what did the Danes still hold possession ?

A. They held possession of the seaports.

Q. How long did they hold possession of the chief maritime towns ?

A. For more than 200 years.

Q. Did they live in amity with the Irish ?

A. No ; a continual warfare was carried on between them.

Q. What is said of Turgesius ?

A. It is said that under the shape of a man, there were concealed the dark features, and cruel qualities of a fiend.

Q. What was a favorite pastime with the Danish invaders ?

A. Burning churches, destroying monasteries and putting the monks to death.

Q. In what other way did these cruel barbarians, display their bravery ?

A. In massacring the defenceless, and tossing little children on the points of their spears, and then gloating over them in their dying agonies.

Q. What did the Danish king, Turgesius, proclaim ?

A. He proclaimed the country over which he ruled, under martial law.

Q. What did he place in each village ?

A. He placed a Danish captain.

Q. What was each family obliged to maintain ?

A. Each family was obliged to maintain a Danish soldier.

Q. What was strictly forbidden ?

A. Education was strictly forbidden, books and manuscripts were burned.

Q. What became of the Irish poets, historians and musicians ?

A. They were imprisoned or driven to the woods and mountains.

Q. What were the Irish nobles and princes forbidden ?

A. They were forbidden to wear their usual habiliments, the cast off clothes of the Danes being considered good enough for slaves.

Q. In 1014, what did the Danes do ?

A. They began to make preparations for reducing the entire country.

Q. Where was their chief power concentrated ?

- A. Their chief power was concentrated in Dublin.
- Q. To carry out their plans, what did they do ?
- A. They collected all their forces from the different parts of Ireland, Scotland, the Hebrides, and the Orkneys.
- Q. What else did they do ?
- A. They brought reinforcements from Denmark and Norway.

---

## CHAPTER XI.

### Defeat of the Danes by Brian Boru.

- Q. At this time who was the chief monarch of Ireland ?
- A. Brian Boru, the greatest and best king Ireland ever saw.
- Q. What did this brave king do ?
- A. He lost no time in opposing the designs of the Danes.
- Q. Where did Brian place himself ?
- A. He placed himself at the head of his Munster forces.
- Q. By whom was he joined ?
- A. By the forces of Meath under Malachy, and the troops of Connaught, commanded by their king Teige.
- Q. Where did Brian march to ?



A. He marched to the vicinity of Dublin.

Q. Where did he take up his position ?

A. On the plain of Clontarf.

Q. The Danes confiding in their strength, for what were they anxious ?

A. They were anxious for an engagement.

Q. When and where was the battle fought ?

A. On Good Friday 1014, the battle was fought on the plain of Clontarf.

Q. Why did the Danes select Good Friday for the day of battle ?

A. Because one of their sorcerers, it is said, found out that if the battle was fought on Good Friday, King Brian would fall.

Q. What did Brian do before the battle ?

A. With a crucifix in one hand and a sword in the other, he went along the line of troops haranguing them.

Q. Of what did he remind them ?

A. He reminded them of all they had suffered from their enemies, their tyranny, their sacrileges, and innumerable perfidies.

Q. What did this good and pious king exclaim ?

A. Holding the crucifix aloft, he said, "On this day the God-man suffered, look upon the sacred sign, beneath its shadow you will conquer, as Constantine did of old."

Q. Of what else did he remind them ?

A. He said, "We fight to day for all that is holy,

for our altars, our homes, and for the honor of our maidens, and the glory of our country."

Q. What else did Brian exclaim ?

A. This day "we'll trample down the dark oppressors, and drive the heathen crew forever from our shores."

Q. Who commanded the Irish army ?

A. It was commanded by Brian's son, Murrough, assisted by his four brothers.

Q. What do Danish historians admit ?

A. They frankly admit that Murrough performed prodigies of valor, on the field of battle.

Q. In whose favor did the battle incline ?

A. In favor of the Irish.

Q. Where were the Danes driven to ?

A. They were driven to their ships with great slaughter.

Q. Where was Brian during the battle ?

A. He was in his tent, his hands joined and raised towards heaven, like another Moses praying for his people.

Q. Did the good king live to enjoy the fruits of his victory ?

A. No; he was killed while at prayer by a fugitive Dane.

Q. Relate the circumstances of his death ?

A. In the midst of the rout and carnage that followed the retreat, Bruadair, one of the Danish chiefs took refuge in a small wood in the vicinity of Brian's tent, and perceiving that the monarch

was unattended, rushed into the tent and plunged a dagger into the royal veteran's heart.

Q. What is said of Brian ?

A. Brian, who is said to have triumphed in fifty battles over the enemies of his country, was now destined to fall in the moment of victory, by the hand of an assassin.

Q. How old was Brian when he died ?

A. He was seventy-six years old.

Q. How did King Brian govern the country ?

A. He governed it for many years with great skill and wisdom.

Q. What effect had his death on the welfare of Ireland ?

A. His death had a most disastrous effect.

Q. How so ?

A. Because after his death the absurd and criminal quarrels of the petty princes were renewed.

Q. Is there any use in recording these disgraceful contentions ?

A. Yes ; they teach us a useful, though bitter lesson.

Q. What do we see in those miserable domestic quarrels ?

A. We see the true cause why a foreign power is able to establish its supremacy in Ireland.

Q. What is said of the power of the Danes after the battle of Clontarf ?

A. The power of the Danes never recovered after the overthrow it received at Clontarf.

Q. Hence what do we find ?

A. We find that their numbers gradually diminish, until at length their feeble remains are mingled with the general mass of the population, and disappear as a distinct people.

Q. By whom was the victory of Brian followed up ?

A. By Malachy, who assumed the reigns of government, and proved himself fully equal to the task.

Q. What is said of Irish literature at this period ?

A. Irish literature, which had been so renowned throughout the west, naturally fell from its former state of advancement, during the Danish invasion.

Q. What is said of her schools and monasteries ?

A. Her schools and monasteries ravaged and burned by the Danes, arose from their ashes and once again resounded with the voice of instruction and prayer.

Q. In what did the Irish excel ?

A. The Irish distinguished themselves not only in literature, for which they were renowned throughout the west, but they also excelled in music.

Q. What is probable ?

A. It is probable that it is from their taste for this art and their skill on the *harp*, that this instrument of music has become the *symbol*, which ornaments the flags of Erin.

Q. How does history represent Ireland from

**King Brian's death 1014, to the opening of the 12th century ?**

**A. History presents nothing but a complication of civil war and domestic dissensions.**

---

CHAPTER XII.

**King Henry II. of England Conceives a design of Invading Ireland.**

**Q. As early as 1155, what design had King Henry of England conceived ?**

**A. The design of invading Ireland.**

**Q. What did he foresee ?**

**A. He foresaw that he could not obtain his object, but under the false pretence of zeal for the interest of religion.**

**Q. With this view, to whom did he apply for a grant of Ireland ?**

**A. To Pope Adrian IV, who was an Englishman by birth.**

**Q. Did the Pope accede to Henry's wishes ?**

**A. It is not certain ; it is a disputed point.**

**Q. Did not Henry in the year 1174, produce a letter which he said he got from Pope Adrian IV., permitting him to go to Ireland ; to promote the glory of God and the good of the people ?**

**A. He did, but its genuineness is questionable.**

**Q. What was the date of the letter produced ?**

A. It was dated 1154, consequently it was twenty years old.

Q. How many years after Adrian's death until Henry produced this letter?

A. Henry did not produce it till 15 years after the Pope's death.

Q. What is known of that letter during those twenty years?

A. During those twenty years nobody had ever heard of that letter, except Henry, who had it in his pocket, and an old man, called John of Salisbury.

Q. Why is the authenticity of that document doubted?

A. Its authenticity is doubted for many reasons.

Q. Please explain some of those reasons?

A. First, Henry could not possibly have received a document from Pope Adrian, bearing such a date.

Q. Why so?

A. Because Adrian was elected Pope on the third of December 1154, and as the news of his election, would at that time take a month to reach England, consequently, Henry could not know of Adrian's election before January 1155.

Q. Whom did Henry send to congratulate the Pope on his election?

A. He sent John of Salisbury, whom it is said he commissioned to obtain a grant of Ireland from the Pope.

Q. How long must John have taken to go to Rome?

A. He must have taken at least a month.

Q. Then, to what date, would that bring the letter ?

A. It would bring it to March 1155, yet the letter of the Pope is dated 1154.

Q. On what other reasonable grounds do you doubt its authenticity ?

A. Secondly, it is not likely the Pope would give an Apostolical mission to the murderer of a Bishop, the robber of churches and the destroyer of ecclesiastical and every other form of liberty, to teach the Ten Commandments of God to the Irish.

Q. Whom was Henry II, after murdering before he went to Ireland in 1171, to teach the Commandments to the Irish ?

A. He was after murdering the holy Archbishop of Canterbury, St. Thomas à Becket.

Q. How was this holy bishop murdered ?

A. He was slain in the church at the foot of the altar, by four of the king's officers. They scattered his brains in the sanctuary before the Blessed Sacrament at the Vesper hour.

Q. Upon whom was the blood of this saintly man ?

A. His blood was on the head of this monster, Henry, who came to Ireland, to teach her pure sons and daughters "Thou shalt not kill".

Q. But does not Mr. Froude tell us that Alexander III, Adrian's successor, mentions that letter ?

A. He does ; but I answer this question on the authority of Dr. Lynch, the author of "Cambrensis

**Eversus,"** as well as on that of the Abbé McGeoghegan, one of the greatest Irish scholars and archaeologists ; and Dr. Moran the learned bishop of Ossory, that Alexander's letter was a forgery, as well as that of Adrian IV.

**Q.** What do we see Henry doing in 1159, on the election of Alexander III ?

**A.** We see him supporting the anti-Pope Octavianus, against Alexander.

**Q.** In 1166. what did Henry do ?

**A.** He supported the anti-Pope Guido, against the same Alexander.

**Q.** According to Mathew of Westminster, what did Henry also do ?

**A.** He obliged every man in England to renounce their allegiance to the true Pope, and adhere to the anti-Pope.

**Q.** Was it likely the Pope would commission such a heretic, to settle ecclesiastical matters in Ireland ?

**A.** Surely. common sense will answer, no.

**Q.** But what did Pope Alexander say to Henry in a letter he wrote him ?

**A.** The Pope instead of giving him permission to settle church matters in Ireland, rebuked him severely.

**Q.** Repeat the words of Pope Alexander to King Henry II ?

**A.** Instead of remedying the disorders caused by your predecessors, you have oppressed the Church,



and you have endeavored to destroy the canons of apostolic men”.

Q. From the above facts, what conclusion must we come to ?

A. That Alexander did not authorize Henry to go to Ireland, to make the Irish *good children of the Pope*.

Q. What else does Mr. Froude tell us of the Irish ?

A. That they were without religion and morality, and that King Henry and his Anglo-Normans came over to teach them the Ten Commandments of God.

Q. What does history tell us of those Anglo-Normans ?

A. History tells us that they came to Ireland as robbers and murderers, as their deeds plainly show.

Q. What was the state of religion in Ireland at that time ?

A. The faith of St. Patrick shone as brightly in the hearts of the Irish, as it did in the days of the great Apostle.

Q. What will be sufficient to state, to show this fact.

A. It will be sufficient to state, that during the few years that elapsed between the end of the Danish and the beginning of the Norman invasion; we find three great Irish Saints reigning together in the Church.

Q. Name those saints ?

A. St. Malachy, Primate of Armagh, St Celsus

his successor, and St. Gregorius, whose name is in the Martyrology of Rome.

Q. What great man do we find in Ireland at this period ?

A. We find St. Laurence O'Toole, of glorious memory ; and hundreds of others, who are held up by the Church for their great learning and sanctity. Is this a mark of infidelity among the Irish ?

Q. Who was St. Laurence O'Toole ?

A. One of the best and greatest prelates who have adorned the Irish Church. He was Archbishop of Dublin, and afterwards of Armagh.

Q. What was his conduct in reference to the English invasion ?

A. With burning zeal for God and his country, he roused the Irish chiefs and princes to a grand combined effort to resist the English invaders, and even bore arms himself to encourage his countrymen.

Q. What conclusions may we draw from this fact.

A. That St. Laurence O'Toole did not need their assistance in the reformation of the Irish.

---

## CHAPTER XIII.

### The Catholic Council of Athboy.

Q. What was held in Ireland in 1168, just two years before the landing of the Anglo-Normans ?

**A.** A great council was held at Athboy.

**Q.** What is said of this council?

**A.** It is said that 13000 representatives of the nation, 13000 warriors on horseback, with their Chieftains, attended that Council, that they might hear whatever the Church commanded, and obey it.

**Q.** At this time, to whom do we find Langfranc, Archbishop of Canterbury writing?

**A.** We find him writing to O'Brien, King of Munster, congratulating him on the religious spirit and peaceful dispositions of his people.

**Q.** To whom do we find St. Anselm, one of the greatest English saints, writing?

**A.** We find him writing a congratulatory letter to Murtoch O'Brien, King of Munster.

**Q.** Please repeat the saints words?

**A.** "I give thanks to God, he says, for the many good things we hear of your Highness, and especially for the profound peace which the subjects of your realm enjoy. All good men who hear this give thanks to God, and pray that He may grant you length of days."

**Q.** What must we now think of Froude, and his lying Anglo-Norman authors?

**A.** We think now, as we always thought, that they were then, and are now, a set of calumniators and deceivers, who never accomplished any great thing without deception and bribery.

**Q.** What has a certain historian said of Froude?

**A.** He says that Froude is a vilifier of history.

**Q.** Does not Mr. Froude tell us that the Irish were immoral at this period ?

**A.** As to this charge, I will answer it by a fact. A king in Ireland was guilty of breaking the Ninth Commandment. His name accursed, was Dermot McMurrough, King of Leinster.

**Q.** What did the other kings and princes do, horror-stricken at his crime ?

**A.** They to a man rose up and banished him from Irish soil, as one unworthy to live in the land ; does not this fact show the Irish to be the most moral and God-fearing people on the globe.

**Q.** To whom did King Dermot apply for aid ?

**A.** He applied to Henry II. King of England, and sought his assistance against his native rivals.

**Q.** What did the vile traitor offer to Henry ?

**A.** He offered, if restored to his kingdom, to become a vassal of the English crown.

**Q.** How was Dermot received by the English monarch ?

**A.** The English monarch received without hesitation, the proffered fealty of his new liege-man.

**Q.** What did Henry give to Dermot ?

**A.** He gave Dermot letters-patent for the purpose of raising forces in his dominions.

**Q.** What did Dermot do ?

**A.** He succeeded in interesting in his cause several persons of distinction.

**Q.** Who was the chief among those ?

A. Richard de Clare, Earl of Pembroke, surnamed Strongbow from his skill in archery.

Q. What two brothers did he interest in his cause ?

A. Maurice Fitz-Gerald and Robert Fitz-Stephens.

Q. What is said of these two men ?

A. They, like the Earl of Pembroke, were persons of broken fortunes.

Q. In what were they ready to embark ?

A. In any enterprise however desperate, which held out the prospect of a speedy relief.

Q. What did Dermot promise to the Earl of Pembroke ?

A. He promised him his daughter Eva in marriage, and to secure him the succession of the throne of Leinster.

Q. On what conditions did he make those promises ?

A. On conditions that he would raise an efficient body of men, and transport them to Ireland the next spring.

Q. What did Dermot promise to the two brothers ?

A. He promised them the town of Wexford and the adjoining lands.

Q. What did they engage to do ?

A. To transport a body of English and Welsh soldiers into Leinster, to aid him in recovering his throne.

Q. After a short time, what do we see Dermot doing ?

A. We find him making the most humble submission to Roderick O'Connor, the chief monarch of Ireland.

Q. For what was this submission intended ?

A. It was intended to disguise his base and treacherous design.

---

## CHAPTER XIV.

### The Anglo-Norman Invasion.

Q. When did the Anglo-Norman invaders first land in Ireland ?

A. They landed on the coast of Wexford, in May, 1170, under the command of Robert Fitz-Stephens.

Q. What city did they attack first ?

A. Wexford, which finally yielded to their arms.

Q. What did the base traitor, Dermot, do ?

A. He collected his forces and joined the invaders.

Q. What is said of seventy of the principal inhabitants of Wexford ?

A. Seventy of the principal inhabitants of the city were taken prisoners.

Q. What is said of their fellow citizens ?

A. It is said that their fellow citizens made every

offer for their ransom ; the city itself was proffered for their liberty.

Q. What was their fate ?

A. They were brutally murdered by the English soldiers, who first broke their limbs, and then hurled them from a high precipice into the sea.

Q. What was their motive in committing this barbarous act ?

A. It was, as we are told, to strike terror into the Irish, a policy which has been only too faithfully pursued by the British government to the present time, but without success.

Q. What was Strongbow doing during this time ?

A. He was collecting forces in South Wales.

Q. On the eve of his departure for Ireland, what did he receive from Henry ?

A. He received a peremptory order, forbidding him to leave the kingdom.

Q. After a brief hesitation, what did Strongbow determine ?

A. He determined to bid defiance to the royal mandate, and set sail for Ireland.

Q. To what city did Strongbow lay siege the day after his arrival.

A. He laid siege to Waterford.

Q. How did the inhabitants behave ?

A. We are told they behaved like heroes, twice repulsing their barbarous assailants.

Q. A breach having been made in the walls, what took place ?

A. The besiegers poured in and overwhelmed the inhabitants by superior numbers.

Q. What followed ?

A. A merciless massacre of the inhabitants followed.

Q. Who arrived in the city while the conflict was at its height ?

A. Dermot arrived, and at his request the general carnage was suspended.

Q. Was this an act of mercy on the part of Dermot the traitor ?

A. For the sake of humanity one would wish it was such. But no, Dermot McMurrugh had his daughter Eva with him ; his wish was to have her nuptials with Strongbow celebrated at once ; and could scarcely accomplish his purpose whilst the cold-blooded massacre was going on.

Q. What took place the following day ?

A. On the following day the nuptials were performed, the marriage procession passed lightly over the bleeding bodies of the dying and the dead. Thus commenced the union between Great Britain and Ireland.

Q. After this Judas-like ceremony, where did the English army march to ?

A. The army set out for Dublin.

Q. What did the inhabitants of Dublin determine ?

A. They determined to negotiate for peace, and



commissioned their illustrious Archbishop, St. Laurence O'Toole, to make terms with Dermot.

Q. Whilst this negotiation was going on, what took place ?

A. Two of the English leaders, Raymond le Gros and Miles de Cogan obtained an entrance into the city, and commenced a merciless butchery of the inhabitants.

Q. When the saint returned, what did he hear ?

A. He heard the cries and moans of misery and agony in all quarters,

Q. In what did he succeed ?

A. He succeeded with great difficulty to appease the fury of the savage soldiers, and the rage of the people who had been so basely treated.

Q. Of what do the Four Masters accuse the people of Dublin ?

A. They accuse them of attempting to purchase their own safety, at the expense of the national interest.

Q. What else do the Four Masters say ?

A. They say a miracle was wrought against them, on account of their selfishness.

Q. What took place ?

A. Hosculf, the Danish governor, fled to the Orkneys, Roderick withdrew his forces, and Miles de Cogan was invested with the government of Dublin.

Q. When did Dermot McMurrough die ?

A. Dermot McMurrough, the author of so many

evils, died on the 4th of May, 1171, at Ferns, of an insufferable and unknown disease, impenitent like another Judas,

Q. On the death of Dermot, what did Strongbow do?

A. He had himself proclaimed king of Leinster.

Q. Were not such proceedings illegal in Ireland?

A. Yes; but this was not a question of right, but one of might, and it was settled as all such questions invariably are by the English, in regard to the rights of Ireland, even to this day.

---

## CHAPTER XV.

### King Henry II. lands in Ireland.

Q. When and where did Henry II. land in Ireland?

A. He landed on the 18th of October, 1171, at Waterford.

Q. What was Henry's design?

A. It was to impress upon the Irish, that he came rather to protect than oppress them.

Q. Did all the Irish chiefs submit to Henry?

A. No; the greater number of them resisted his authority.

Q. Was not an effort made by the Irish to expel the Anglo-Norman invaders?

A. Yes; and their hopes were excited by a vic-

tory gained over Strongbow, the English general, at Thurles.

Q. Who was at the head of the new confederacy against the invaders ?

A. Roderick O'Connor, king-paramount of Ireland.

Q. Did Roderick succeed ?

A. No ; his noble efforts were marred by the old curse of Ireland—the want of unity and combination amongst her inhabitants.

Q. Who was the first Irish prince to submit to the English king ?

A. MacCarthy, prince of Desmond.

Q. After receiving the homage of the king of Desmond, where did Henry march to ?

A. He marched his army to Cashel, where he received the submission of Donald O'Brien, king of Thomond.

Q. What effect had their example on the other princes ?

A. Their example was followed by many of the inferior potentates.

Q. How did Henry dismiss those princes ?

A. The English monarch loaded them with presents.

Q. Where did Henry next march to ?

A. He marched to Dublin.

Q. What are we told of the city of Dublin at this period ?

A. That it was the rival of London, from the extent of its commerce.

Q. How was Henry received in Dublin ?

A. He was, we are told, received joyfully by the inhabitants.

Q. What did the neighboring chieftains do ?

A. They hastened to offer their allegiance to the English king.

Q. Who was among them ?

A. Among them was O'Rourke of Brefney.

Q. Who finally came ?

A. Roderick O'Connor, who was the last chief monarch of Ireland.

Q. Did Henry II., call a parliament in Ireland ?

A. He did. and that parliament passed a law arranging the executive government of Ireland.

Q. Was Ireland peaceful during Henry's reign ?

A. While Henry remained in Ireland it was peaceful.

Q. How long did Henry remain in Ireland ?

A. He remained six months.

Q. What occurred soon after his departure ?

A. A civil war succeeded the short stay of peace, which had prevailed during Henry's sojourn.

Q. How did it arise ?

A. From the discontent excited by the grasping rapacity of Henry and his satellites.

Q. Give an example of this ?

A. Henry granted the entire kingdom of Meath,

the royal patrimony of the house of Melachlin, to Hugh De Lacy, an Anglo-Norman knight.

Q. What was the extent of land thus transferred to DeLacy ?

A. About eight hundred thousand acres.

Q. Who possessed this territory prior to Henry's seizure of it ?

A. O'Rourke, to whom it had been given by Roderick O'Connor.

Q. Did O'Rourke endeavor to obtain amends ?

A. Yes ; he asked redress from De Lacy, who appointed Tara Hill for a conference.

Q. Did they meet in conference according to agreement ?

A. Yes ; they met with a stipulated number of followers upon each side.

Q. What took place ?

A. The two chiefs, unarmed, and at a distance from the rest, conferred together.

Q. Did their conference end peaceably ?

A. No ; a strife arose, and O'Rourke was slain by a relative of De Lacy's, named Griffith.

Q. How did they treat his corpse ?

A. His corpse was beheaded and buried with the feet upwards, in token of contempt.

---

## CHAPTER XVI.

## Reign of Henry II. (concluded.)

Q. Where was his head exposed ?

A. His head was exposed on a stake over one of the gates of Dublin, and finally sent to England, to the king.

Q. Where did Strongbow reside at this time ?

A. He resided at Ferns, in Leinster, the residence of his father-in-law, King Dermot McMurrough.

Q. In what was he engaged ?

A. In a civil war with two native chiefs, O'Dempsey and O'Faley.

Q. What was the cause of the quarrel ?

A. O'Faley refused to attend the court of Strongbow ; whereupon the latter invaded his territory.

Q. What was the result ?

A. Strongbow was defeated by O'Faley, who captured the standard of Leinster.

Q. In what year did this skirmish take place ?

A. In 1173.

Q. What took place the following year ?

A. Strongbow sent an army to attack Donald O'Brien, king of Limerick.

Q. What was the result ?

A. Strongbow's army was surprised at Ossory, and totally demolished by a party whom Donald O'Brien commanded.

Q. What was Strongbow's revenge for this defeat ?

A. He sent Raymond, one of his best military officers, with a strong force, to besiege Limerick.

Q. Did Raymond succeed in taking the city ?

A. Yes ; notwithstanding a gallant defence.

Q. How long did the English keep the city of Limerick ?

A. Nearly two years.

Q. Why did they, then, evacuate it ?

A. Strongbow died, and Raymond was obliged to repair to Dublin.

Q. What did Raymond, unable to leave a sufficient force to keep Limerick ?

A. He surrendered it back to Donald O'Brien, at the same time, pretending to rely on O'Brien's future loyalty to the king of England.

Q. How did Donald O'Brien act on obtaining possession of the city ?

A. Before Raymond's forces were out of sight, Donald set fire to the city, saying, " It shall never again be made a nest for foreigners."

Q. Where was Strongbow buried ?

A. In Christ Church, Dublin.

Q. What did De Lacy do in Meath ?

A. He gave the castle of Slane, in Meath, to one of his followers, named Fleming.

Q. What did the Irish chief who was dispossessed do ?

A. He surprised the English garrison and inhab-

itants of Slane, put them all to the sword, and recovered possession of his castle.

Q. What further results followed ?

A. The English in Meath were so terrified, that the garrisons of three other castles, built by Fleming in that territory, evacuated them on the following day.

Q. In 1175, what took place ?

A. A treaty was formed between King Henry and Roderick O'Connor.

Q. Was this treaty observed ?

A. No; in the unsettled state of the times, its observance was impossible.

Q. Did the Irish and their invaders live together in peace ?

A. Not at that period. The greatest hatred, animated the two races against each other.

Q. What, then, prevented the Irish from combining to drive the invaders out of the country ?

A. They were too busy quarrelling with each other for any such great national effort.

Q. To whom did King Henry grant Ireland ?

A. To his son John.

Q. What was John's character ?

A. He was cruel, profligate, extravagant, and vain.

Q. Of what was he destitute ?

A. He was destitute alike of moral principle and political wisdom.

Q. In what year did John land in Ireland ?



A. He landed at Waterford in 1185.

Q. How did he commence ?

A. By offering personal insults to the Irish chieftains, who came to offer their respects to him as the son of their sovereign.

Q. What effect had his behavior on the Irish chieftains ?

A. His insolent behavior roused their indignation.

Q. What did the Irish chieftains now perceive ?

A. They perceived, when too late, that they intrusted their liberties to treacherous keepers.

Q. To what did they agree ?

A. They agreed to unite against the enemies of their country.

Q. Did they succeed ?

A. So great was their success, that according to English chronicles, John lost, in his different contests with the Irish, almost the whole of his army.

Q. When King Henry received these tidings, what steps did he take ?

A. He recalled his foolish and profligate son.

Q. In whose hands did Henry place the reins of government ?

A. He placed the whole power, both civil and military, in the hands of John De Courcy, earl of Ulster.

Q. Did De Courcy put down the insurrection ?

A. Yes; for at this critical juncture, the old

curse of Ireland, disunion, among her chiefs, rendered them liable to easy defeat.

Q. What became of King Roderick O'Connor ?

A. He was dethroned by his sons, and ended his days in the monastery of Cong.

Q. What schools did Roderick found and endow ?

A. The schools of Armagh.

Q. When did King Henry die ?

A. In the year 1189, at Chinon, in Normandy.

---

## CHAPTER XVII.

### The Reigns of Richard I., John, and Henry III.

Q. Who succeeded Henry as king of England ?

A. His eldest son, Richard.

Q. Did King Richard assume the control of Ireland ?

A. No ; he left it to his brother John, to whom his father, the late king, had granted it.

Q. What was John's first step ?

A. He removed De Courcy, and appointed Hugh De Lacy as lord deputy of Ireland.

Q. What was the result of this act ?

A. Open hatred on the part of De Courcy towards his successor.

Q. Did De Lacy long continue lord deputy of Ireland ?

A. No ; he was soon removed, and replaced by William Marshal, Strongbow's son-in law.

Q. What measures did the lord deputy Marshal take ?

A. He proceeded to Munster to subdue the insurgents.

Q. What was the issue ?

A. O'Brien, prince of Thomond, encountered him at Thurles, and defeated his forces.

Q. What followed ?

A. The English were routed from Munster, with the sole exception of Cork, which was still held by the English garrison.

Q. Did the Irish make any effort to take Cork ?

A. Yes ; McCarthy of Desmond besieged the city, and compelled the English garrison to surrender.

Q. In what year did King John die ?

A. In the year 1216.

Q. In what year did Donald O'Brien, prince of Thomond die ?

A. In the year 1194.

Q. What Cathedral did Donald build and endow ?

A. The magnificent Cathedral of Cashel.

Q. By whom was King John succeeded ?

A. By his son Henry, who was only in his tenth year.

Q. What is said of the coronation of the young monarch ?

A. It is said that, young Henry was hastily crowned at Bristol, with one of his mother's golden bracelets.

Q. Did Henry III., hold parliaments in Ireland ?

A. Yes; he convened Irish parliaments in the years 1253 and 1269.

Q. What do you notice with respect to the Irish parliaments?

A. I notice that the king's Irish subjects enjoyed a domestic parliament in Ireland, from as early period as his English subjects enjoyed a parliament in England.

Q. What took place in 1315?

A. Ireland was invaded by Edward Bruce, brother of the king of Scotland.

Q. What force did Bruce land in Ireland?

A. He landed a force of 3000 men.

Q. By whom was he joined?

A. By the Irish lords of Ulster.

Q. What followed?

A. They seized on several castles, and speedily banished the English from Ulster.

Q. How did the clergy act?

A. Many of them declared in favor of Bruce.

Q. What was Bruce's next step?

A. He got himself crowned king of Ireland, at Dun dalk.

Q. What befell him soon after?

A. He was killed in battle, and the Scots were compelled to retire.

Q. Who was appointed lord deputy of Ireland in 1361?

A. Lionel, duke of Clarence, the second son of Edward III.

**Q.** What remarkable statute was passed during Lionel's vice-royalty ?

**A.** The statute of Kilkenny.

**Q.** In what year was it passed ?

**A.** In 1367.

**Q.** What were the provisions of this act ?

**A.** It forbade under pain of high treason, marriage, fostering, or gossiping between persons of English descent and Irish families.

**Q.** What else did it forbid ?

**A.** It forbade all persons of English descent to use the Irish language, or to adopt Irish customs.

**Q.** What other prohibition did it contain ?

**A.** It forbade the king's subjects in Ireland to entertain in their houses, Irish minstrels, musicians, or rhymers.

**Q.** What else did this famous statute forbid ?

**A.** It also forbade the loyal subjects to allow Irish cattle to graze upon their lands.

**Q.** What was the consequence of this insane act ?

**A.** Fresh turmoils, riots, civil wars, and insurrections.

**Q.** Was this *statute-law* observed ?

**A.** No ; for the English descent intermarried with the Irish, adopted their customs and even their names.

---

CHAPTER XVIII.

The Reigns of Edward III. and Richard II.]

Q. In what year did Edward the Third visit Ireland?

A. In 1377.

Q. Did Edward find Ireland a profitable possession?

A. No; it was a source of heavy expense to him.

Q. Did he ask the Irish for supplies of money?

A. He did; but they replied that they had none to give his majesty.

Q. What was Edward's next step?

A. He summoned a sort of Irish parliament consisting of two members from each county, two from each city and borough, and two priests from each diocese, to meet him at Westminster.

Q. When they met, how did Edward address them?

A. He complained of the expense of governing Ireland, and demanded money.

Q. What did the Irish deputies answer?

A. That their constituents had expressly prohibited them from granting his majesty any; whereon the king dismissed them.

Q. When did Edward the Third die?

A. In 1377.

Q. Did King Richard the Second visit Ireland?

A. He did, in the hope of quelling the disturbances.

Q. How was he received on his arrival ?

A. The Irish chieftains and Anglo-Normans hastened to pay him their homage and allegiance.

Q. What treaty did Richard make with McMurrough, prince of Leinster ?

A. He stipulated that McMurrough and all his followers, should quit Leinster by a certain day, having surrendered all their territories there to his majesty, his heirs and successors.

Q. What compensation did King Richard give McMurrough for this vast surrender ?

A. His majesty gave him full license and encouragement, to seize all such territories belonging to the Irish septs in any other part of the realm, as he could grasp by violence.

Q. What else did Richard promise to McMurrough ?

A. His majesty promised to pay him an annual pension of 80 marks.

Q. Did Richard hold a parliament in Ireland ?

A. He did ; in 1395.

Q. What measures did he take whilst in Ireland ?

A. He took wiser and more just ones, than his extraordinary treaty with McMurrough could lead us to expect.

Q. What were those wise measures ?

A. He provided learned and upright judges for the courts of law.

Q. What else did Richard try to do ?

A. He tried to conciliate the four principal Irish princes.

Q. What means did he take to bring this about ?

A. He conferred on them the order of knight-hood, and entertained them at a banquet at his own table.

Q. What did he foresee ?

A. He foresaw the advantages, which would result from a milder mode of dealing with the Irish, than had been used by his predecessors.

Q. Whom did Richard appoint as Lord-Lieutenant ?

A. He appointed his kinsman the Earl of March ?

Q. Did March find the Irish obedient ?

A. No, as soon as Richard had quitted Ireland, several chiefs broke out in rebellion.

Q. Did McMurrough evacuate Leinster according to his treaty ?

A. No ; and when required to do so he took up arms against the Lord-Lieutenant.

Q. What was the result ?

A. The Lord-Lieutenant was slain in battle.

Q. When this news reached Richard, what did he do ?

A. He proceeded once more to Ireland, in order to chastise Mc Murrough and his confederate chiefs.

Q. Did Richard succeed ?

A. No ; McMurrough was safe in his mountain fastnesses, and could not be brought to an open engagement.

Q. What became of Richard's army ?

A. Richard's forces were unable to dislodge the



Irish from their rocky glens and dense forests, and as the country had been greatly wasted, provisions could not be procured; so that numbers of the English army perished from famine.

Q. What was Richard's next measure?

A. Finding himself obliged to retreat, he proposed to enter on a new treaty with McMurrough.

Q. How did McMurrough receive this proposal?

A. With scornful defiance.

Q. Where was Richard obliged to go?

A. He was obliged to return to England to oppose Henry, Duke of Lancaster, who during the king's absence from the country, had landed there to claim the crown.

Q. What befell Richard?

A. Richard was betrayed into the hands of Lancaster and thrown into prison, where he shortly afterwards died.

Q. What events occurred in Ireland during the reign of Richard?

A. The Irish chiefs greatly increased their forces.

Q. Did the Irish lords of English descent become more *national* than they had previously been?

A. Yes; they began to feel that they were Irish.

Q. What is certain?

A. They became Irish chieftains and intermarried with the old Milesian families.

Q. Was there not a law forbidding such marriages?

A. Yes; but that law was no longer observed.

Q. Who was appointed Lord-Lieutenant of Ireland in 1449 ?

A. Richard, Duke of York.

Q. Was he a good viceroy ?

A. Yes ; one of the best that ever ruled Ireland.

Q. What is said of him ?

A. That he kept good faith in his treaties with the Irish chiefs ; he felt for the wrongs of the peasantry, and tried to improve their condition.

Q. What circumstance called the Duke of York from Ireland ?

A. He was obliged to go to England to defend himself against a false charge brought against him.

Q. What was the charge against him ?

A. That he had encouraged the rebellion of a man named Jack Cade and his party.

Q. What occurred in England ?

A. There was a rebellion against Henry VI., who was thrown into prison, and the royal power was transferred to the Duke of York.

Q. How long did he retain it ?

A. Not long. Queen Margaret assembled the friends of her imprisoned husband, and gained a victory over the Yorkists at Blore Heath.

Q. What was the Duke's next step ?

A. He fled for safety to Ireland.

Q. How was he received there ?

A. He was received with great joy ?

Q. What did he do shortly afterwards ?

A. He returned to England with a large force of

Irish adherents, to strike another blow for the crown.

Q. What was the Duke's ultimate fate ?

A. He was slain in the battle of Wakefield and his army routed.

---

## CHAPTER XIX.

### Unchristian Laws.—Their results.

Q. What oppressive measures were enacted in 1463 ?

A. It was decreed that all the Irish, who inhabited the English district should take English names, wear English costume, and swear allegiance.

Q. What other act was passed ?

A. That if any Englishman was injured by an Irishman beyond the Pale, the said Englishman might revenge himself on the entire *clan* to which the aggressor belonged.

Q. What was another measure enacted at this time ?

A. That if an Englishman suspected that an Irishman was going to rob or steal, he was at liberty to kill him.

Q. What was the result of this law ?

A. It gave a great facility to the English inhabitants to murder their Irish neighbors.

Q. How so ?

A. Because it was sufficient justification for the

crime, to allege that the deceased was an Irishman, and that he was going to steal or rob.

Q. Did the English take advantage of these barbarous laws, to oppress and murder their Irish neighbors?

A. Yes; history records many instances where they did.

Q. What does Sir John Davis, Attorney-General, in the time of James the First, tell us?

A. He tells us that in Waterford, in the 29th year of the reign of Edward the First of England, a certain Edward Butler brought an action against Robert de Almey, to recover goods that Robert had stolen from him.

Q. What was the result?

A. Robert acknowledged that he had stolen the goods, that he was a thief, but the defence he put in was that the man he had robbed was an Irishman, and that there could be no action brought against him.

Q. What else do we find on the same authority,—Sir John Davis?

A. We find a description of a jail-delivery at Waterford, where a man named Robert Walsh, had killed the son of one Ivor McGilmore.

Q. What became of Robert?

A. He was arraigned and tried for manslaughter, and without the slightest difficulty acknowledged his guilt.

Q. How did Robert express himself in court?

A. Yes ; " said he " I did kill him ; but you have no right to try me for it ; for he was an Irishman ! "

Q. What was the result ?

A. For the murder he was let go *scot-free*, as the killing of an Irishman was no crime.

Q. From the above facts what do we see ?

A. That the English made laws to destroy and root out the Celtic race.

Q. What else does Sir John Davis tell us ?

A. He says, " The Irish were considered as foreigners and enemies, insomuch that an Englishman might settle upon an Irishman's farm with impunity. There was no redress for the Irish. "

Q. Could not an Irishman bring an action against an Englishman, to recover his property ?

A. No ; according to law the Englishman was perfectly justified in what he did, the Irishman would be turned out of court.

Q. Could not an Irishman purchase land from an Englishman ?

A. No ; the law forbade it.

Q. What was the effect of this abominable law ?

A. It was that the English kept their land and added to it by plunder, whilst an Irishman would not be allowed to purchase.

Q. What if an Englishman made a will and left an acre of land to an Irishman ?

A. The moment it was proved that the receiver

was an Irishman, the land was forfeited to the Crown of England.

Q. What do we find in the first year of the reign of Henry VI?

A. We find that Edward Butler, of Clonboyne, in the County Meath, left some land for charitable purposes.

Q. To whom did he leave it?

A. To his two chaplains, Conor O'Mulrooney and John McCann.

Q. What was proved?

A. It was proved that the two priests were Irish, and although the land was left for charitable purposes, it was forfeited to the Crown of England.

Q. Later, and what do we find?

A. We find a pious woman, named Catherine Dowdell, making a will when dying, thereby leaving some land near Sword, in the County Dublin, to a priest named John O'Bellane.

Q. Well; what followed?

A. The land was forfeited to the Crown, because John was an Irishman.

Q. Tell us some of the laws passed in Ireland in the reign of Edward III.

A. That if any man speak the Irish language, keep company with the Irish, or adopt Irish customs, his lands shall be forfeited to the English crown.

Q. If an Englishman married an Irish woman, what was the penalty?

A. He was sentenced to be half-hanged ; to have his heart cut out before he was dead ; then to have his head struck off ; and every rood of his land passed to the Crown of England. Thus.—Sir John Davis, the great English authority, speaks.

Q. Now, what would the English historian, Froude, and his countrymen fain impress on our minds ?

A. That England was justified in her treatment of Ireland, because the latter would not submit.

Q. What will, I ask, be the verdict of all sensible men on this point ?

A. It will be this, that Irishmen would be unworthy the name of men, if they freely submitted to be robbed, plundered, and degraded.

Q. What must be considered ?

A. We must consider what race of people it was, that these Saxon churls tried to contemn and degrade.

---

## CHAPTER XX

### The Irish Race—The Feudal System.

Q. What is said of the Irish *race* ?

A. Gerald Barry, speaking of the Irish *race*, says, "the Irish came from the grandest *race* that he knew of on this side of the globe : " And there are no better people under the sun. "

Q. By the word " better, " what did Barry mean ?

A. He meant, that a more valiant or more intellectual people than the Irish, did not exist under the sun.

Q. What is it that the Saxon invaders could not understand, in the nature of the Irish ?

A. Being slaves themselves, they could not understand why the Irish could not become slaves likewise. Consider the history of the feudal system under which the Saxons lived ?

Q. What power did the feudal system of government give to the king ?

A. It made the King of England lord of every inch of land in England.

Q. From whom did the English nobles hold their lands ?

A. From the king under feudal conditions, the most degrading that can be imagined.

Q. How so ?

A. Because, if a man died and left his heir, a son or daughter, under age, the heir or heiress, together with the estate, went into the hands of the king.

Q. But suppose he left a widow with eight or ten children ?

A. She would have to support all the children herself, whatever way she could, out of her own dower ; but the estate and the eldest son or the eldest daughter, went into the hands of the king.

Q. What could the king do during the minority of the heir ?



A. He might spend the revenues, or rent of the estate, and no one could demand an account of him ?

Q. What else could he do ?

A. He could sell the estate and castle to whom he pleased ?

Q. What power did this slavish system give the king ?

A. It gave him power to sell to the highest bidder, the son or daughter, when of age to marry ?

Q. Have we any instances of this barbarous traffic recorded in history ?

A. Yes ; we find Godfrey De Mandeville buying for twenty thousand marks, from King John, Isabella, Countess of Gloster.

Q. What other example of this do we find in history ?

A. We find that Isabella De Lingera, another heiress, offered a hundred marks to the same King John—for what do you think ?—for liberty to marry whoever she liked, and not be obliged to marry the man he would give her to . . . . .

Q. Was this traffic confined only to young heirs or heiresses.

A. No ; widows also came under this slave-law ?

Q. What curious example have we of this ?

A. We have Alice, Countess of Warwick, paying King John one thousand pounds sterling, in gold, for leave to remain a widow as long as she pleased.

Q. Is this the slavery called the feudal system, of which Mr. Froude is so proud ?

A. Yes, and of which he says: "It lay at the root of all that is noble and good in Europe."

Q. What was England determined to do in Ireland, by her feudal system?

A. To exterminate the Irish and to take every acre of the land to herself.

Q. What did Sir James Cusack, an English commissioner sent over to Ireland by Henry VIII., write to his Majesty?

A. He wrote to his Majesty these quaint words: "The Irish are of opinion that the English wish to get all their lands, and root them out completely?"

Q. What does Mr. Froude acknowledge?

A. That the land question lay at the root of the whole business.

Q. What would be the effect of the feudal system in Ireland, if the Irish could be conquered?

A. Every inch of land in Ireland, would be handed over to the Norman king and his Norman nobles. The Saxon might submit to feudal laws, and be made a slave; but the Celt never would.

Q. What was England's great mistake?

A. It was this, that the English people never realized the fact, that in dealing with the Irish, they had to deal with the proudest race on the face of the earth?

Q. Whom did Edward V., appoint Lord Deputy of Ireland?

A. He appointed the Earl of Desmond?

Q. What was Desmond's first act as Lord Deputy?

A. He made war on the Irish septs in Meath.

Q. Did he subdue them ?

A. No ; they took him prisoner. He was, however, soon set at liberty by his friend, O'Connor of Offally.

Q. What was the Earl's next step ?

A. He made war on O'Brien of Thomond.

Q. With what success ?

A. He was defeated by O'Brien.

Q. Was Desmond removed from the government for these failures ?

A. No ; the king continued him in the vice-royalty ; until at last the queen became his enemy.

Q. How did he offend the queen ?

A. By speaking incautiously of the meanness of her birth.

Q. What was his fate ?

A. He was attainted by parliament on several charges, and executed without trial.

---

## CHAPTER XXI.

### The Reigns of Henry VII., and Henry VIII.

Q. In the reign of Henry the Seventh, what was diminished in Ireland ?

A. The power of the Governor General was much diminished.

Q. How was this done ?

A. By decreeing that no act passed by parlia-

ment was valid, without the consent of the King of England.

Y. What was the effect of this measure ?

A. The effect was that Irish legislation became dependent on that of England.

Q. In what year did Henry the Seventh die ?

A. In the year 1509.

Q. Who succeeded Henry VII., to the throne of England ?

A. His second son, Henry the Eighth.

Q. Whom did Henry VIII., appoint Deputy of Ireland ?

A. The Earl of Surrey.

Q. Whom did Surrey replace ?

A. He replaced the Earl of Kildare.

Q. How did Kildare forfeit the king's confidence ?

A. By an act of disobedience.

Q. To where did Henry call him ?

A. To London.

Q. What arrangements did Kildare make before starting ?

A. He supplied all his own castles with arms and ammunition from the king's stores; he committed the government to his son, Lord Thomas Fitz-Gerald, who was only 20 years of age; and then proceeded to London.

Q. How was he treated on arriving in London ?

A. He was imprisoned in the Tower.

Q. How did his son, Lord Thomas, act in Ireland ?

A. Having been excited by a false report of his father's execution, he rushed, followed by 150 armed men, into the Council chamber, in Dublin, and there renounced his allegiance to King Henry.

Q. What was Lord Thomas's next step ?

A. He quitted the astonished Council, and attacked the garrison of Dublin.

Q. With what success ?

A. His small force was at first easily defeated, but retiring from Dublin and joining the O'Connors and O'Neills, he soon increased his power.

Q. What steps were taken against him ?

A. The new Lord-Lieutenant, Sir William Skeffington, besieged the castle of Maynooth, the best stronghold of the Fitz-Geralds.

Q. Did the castle make a gallant defence ?

A. Yes ; it held out for fourteen days ; and Skeffington was about to retire, when it was placed in his power by the treachery of a foster-brother of Lord Thomas.

Q. How did Skeffington reward the traitor ?

A. He paid him the stipulated price of his base treachery, then had him hanged.

Q. What effect did the taking of Maynooth castle produce on Lord Thomas's fortune ?

A. Many of his followers discouraged by the news, dispersed.

Q. What did Lord Thomas do ?

A. He made himself so formidable in an irregular warfare, that Lord Grey, the English com-

mander, solemnly promised him protection if he would surrender himself.

Q. Did Lord Thomas confide in the Englishman's promise ?

A. He did, and gave himself up.

Q. How did Lord Grey then treat him ?

A. He sent him prisoner to England.

Q. What other base treatment did the Fitzgeralds receive at his hands ?

A. He invited five uncles of Lord Thomas to a feast, had them treacherously seized in the banquet-hall, and sent in chains to London.

Q. What was the conduct of King Henry towards these five unoffending men ?

A. He had them all hanged at Tyburn, together with the unfortunate Lord Thomas.

Q. What fate befell the treacherous Grey ?

A. He lost the favor of his sovereign, and, by a just retribution, was himself hanged at Tyburn.

Q. What means were then made use of by the English, in subduing their enemies ?

A. The principal means were treachery and bad faith, a policy which they have in relation to the Irish, carried on to this day.

---

## CHAPTER XXII.

### The Reign of Henry VIII. (continued).

Q. What great event took place in England during the reign of Henry VIII ?

A. The king rejected the Pope's supremacy over the Church, and set up his own in its place.

Q. What caused Henry to take such a step?

A. The Pope would not grant him a divorce from his lawful Queen, Catherine, in order to marry Anne Boleyn.

Q. Whom had King Henry consecrated Archbishop?

A. Thomas Cranmer, a man exactly suited to his purpose.

Q. What was the first act of Cranmer?

A. He wrote a letter to the king, calling on him for the good of his soul, to grant him his royal license to examine the validity of his marriage.

Q. What did the Holy See do?

A. The Holy See pronounced its decision on the 20th of March, 1534, declaring the marriage with Catherine to be valid and indissoluble, and charging the king to restore her to her rights, under pain of excommunication.

Q. What had already taken place in England?

A. When the sentence reached the court, England had already been severed from the communion of the Church.

Q. What act had been passed by the king?

A. An act of parliament had been passed, by which all jurisdiction in spiritual things was transferred to the Crown.

Q. By this act of parliament, what was King Henry VIII. made?

A. He was made supreme head of the Church of England.

Q. What was the fate of those who refused to acknowledge Henry as head of the Church?

A. They were decapitated.

Q. What befell Sir Thomas Moore and Bishop Fisher?

A. They were executed for denying the king's supremacy, in religious matters.

Q. Who was Sir Thomas Moore?

A. He was Lord High Chancellor of England for many years,

Q. Who was Bishop Fisher?

A. He was Bishop of Rochester, England, and the only Catholic Bishop in that country, that refused to assent to the abolition of the Pope's supremacy,

Q. As Henry was now a self-made Pope, what did he require?

A. He required a Vicar-General.

Q. On whom did he confer that dignity?

A. On Thomas Cromwell, who was a follower of Anne Boleyn's family.

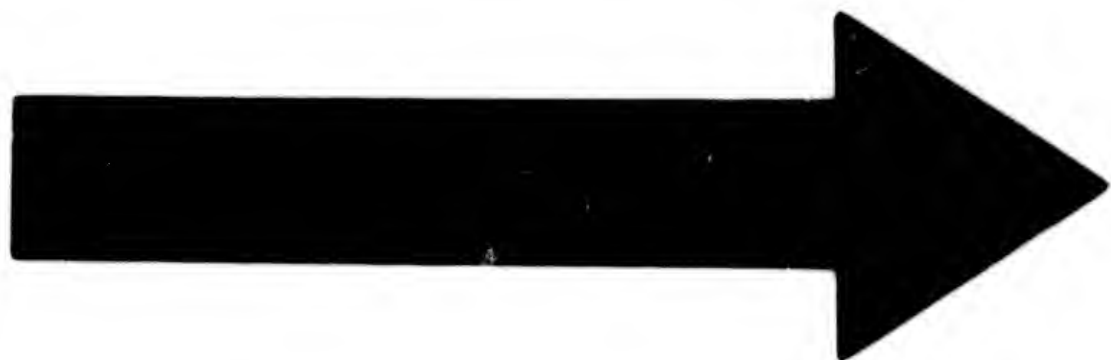
Q. What did Cromwell suggest to Henry?

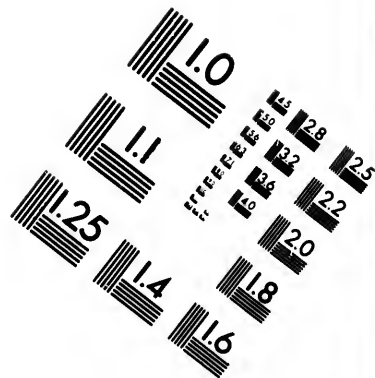
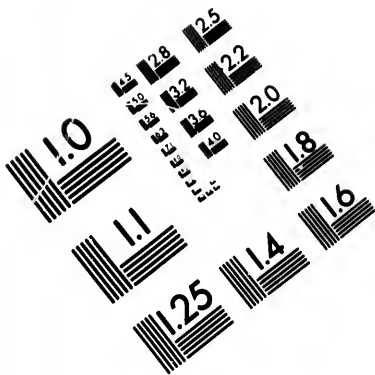
A. To set the *Papal Court* at defiance, and legalize the sin which the Pope's authority would not allow.

Q. What was the next move made by these two holy men, Henry and his vicar?

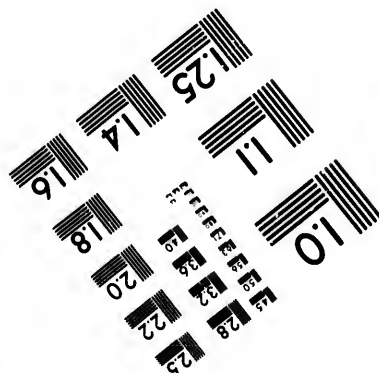
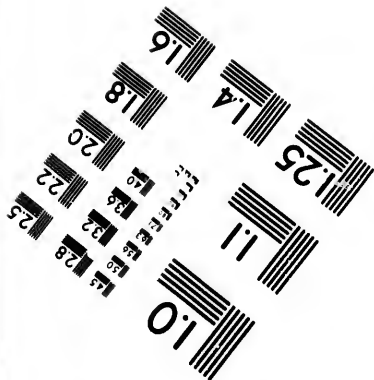
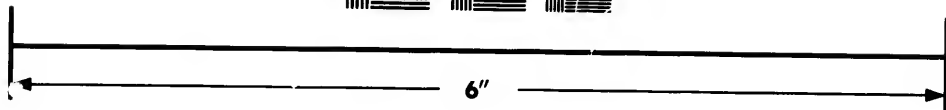
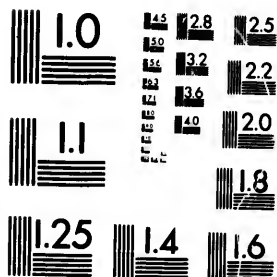
A. It was to suppress the monasteries and get hold of all the money, which the good monks and nuns had to distribute among the poor.







**IMAGE EVALUATION  
TEST TARGET (MT-3)**



**Photographic  
Sciences  
Corporation**

23 WEST MAIN STREET  
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580  
(716) 872-4503



Q. Did Henry immediately promulgate his new doctrine in Ireland ?

A. No ; he determined to establish his new religion firmly in England, before he attempted to do anything in Ireland.

Q. Did this spiritual father, Henry, then, forget the Irish ?

A. Not at all ; the Irish had monasteries and nunneries, which were very tempting to this robber-king Pope.

Q. What did Henry soon find out ?

A. That there was something more than mere acts of parliament necessary, to establish his new religion in faithful, Catholic Ireland.

Q. For what did he therefore seek ?

A. He sought for some apostate priest, who might do for Ireland what wicked Cranmer did for England.

Q. Did he find one ?

A. No ; for no amount of persecution or bribery, would induce the Irish to become apostates ; there were no Judases among them.

Q. What was Henry's next step ?

A. He picked out an apostate monk, named George Brown, an Englishman, and had him consecrated the first Protestant Archbishop of Dublin.

Q. What commission did Henry VIII., give this George Brown ?

A. To get the Irish to follow the example of the carnal English, in denying the Pope and acknowledging Henry as head of the Church.

Q. When did Brown arrive in Ireland ?

A. In the year 1534.

Q. What was his first act ?

A. He called a Council of the Irish Catholic Bishops.

Q. What did he say to them ?

A. He said : " You must change your allegiance, renounce the Pope of Rome, and take Henry, King of England, in his stead."

Q. What was the effect of this announcement on the Irish Bishops ?

A. They were horrified at such blasphemous language.

Q. Who immediately rose up from the Council-Board ?

A. Cromer, the venerable Archbishop of Armagh.

---

## CHAPTER XXIII.

### The Reign of King Henry VIII. (concluded).

Q. Filled with holy zeal, what did the venerable Prelate say ?

A. He said : " What blasphemy is this I hear ? Ireland shall never change her faith ; Ireland shall never renounce the Vicar of Christ."

Q. How did all the other Bishops and priests act ?

A. They all followed the example of the Primate of Armagh.

Q. What did Brown write to his protector, Thomas Cromwell ?

A. He wrote : " I can make nothing of this people ; and I would return to England, only I am afraid the king would have my head taken off. "

Q. What else does this heretical Brown write, on another occasion ?

A. He says : " With all my threats and promises, I can get only three priests in the whole diocese of Dublin to take the oath. "

Q. As it was found that the Irish would not apostatize, what was commenced ?

A. The most cruel persecution commenced, and every religious order in Ireland, sent numbers of holy souls to join the Royal army of martyrs in Heaven.

Q. What was the conduct of the Irish, during the persecution raised by Henry VIII., of England ?

A. They showed such fidelity and generosity, that all but a few exceptions, from the richest in the land to the poorest, were willing to lay down their lives cheerfully for the faith, which had been taught them by their glorious Apostle, St. Patrick.

Q. What recollections of Henry VIII., and Elizabeth, do the Irish still preserve ?

A. The names of Henry and Elizabeth, with the regicide Cromwell, are yet held in execration among the Irish.

Q. Cannot time erase those frightful recollections from the nation's memory ?

A. No; Ireland has not yet forgotten the extor-  
tions, persecutions, cruelties, tortures, and bloody  
executions inflicted by those barbarous tyrants on  
her children.

Q. When did Henry VIII., die ?

A. He died in 1547, the fifty-sixth of his age,  
and thirty-eight of his reign, being the most unjust,  
hard-hearted, and most sanguinary tyrant, that the  
world ever saw : whether Christian or Heathen.

Q. What occupied the mind of this English Nero ?

A. The principal business of his life was the  
ordering of accusations, confiscations, and execu-  
tions.

Q. How did he appear for some years before his  
death ?

A. For some years before his death, he became  
from his gluttony and debaucheries, an unwieldy  
and disgusting mass of flesh ; moved about by  
means of mechanical inventions.

Q. What did this monster, in human shape, still  
retain ?

A. He still retained all the ferocity and bloody-  
mindedness of his former years.

Q. What were the precautions of his friends,  
even about his death-bed ?

A. Every one of them was afraid to intimate to  
Henry his danger, lest death to the intimated,  
should be the consequence.

Q. What are we told by the historian, Cobbett ?

A. He tells us that Henry the Eight, found Eng-

land in peace, unity, plenty and happiness; but, he left her torn by factions and schisms, and her people wandering about in misery and want.

Q. What else does this historian tell us?

A. He tells us that Henry laid the foundations of immorality, dishonesty and pauperism, all which produced an abundant harvest in the reigns of his unhappy, barren, mischievous and miserable children; with whom, at the end of a few years, his house and his name became extinct.

Q. What does the same historian, Cobbett, say of Henry VIII., as head of the English Church?

A. He says: "Henry's "Reformation" was engendered in beastly lust, brought forth in hypocrisy and perfidy, cherished and fed by plunder, devastation, and rivers of innocent blood, both English and Irish.

---

## CHAPTER XXIV.

### The Reigns of Edward VI and Queen Mary.

Q. Who succeeded Henry VIII., on the throne of England?

A. His son Edward the Sixth, who was destined to wear the Crown but six years and four months.

Q. What was the first action of the new king's government in Ireland?

A. Some disturbance having been excited in



Leix and Offaly, the English government induced the chiefs of the two districts, O'Moore and O'Connor, to go to England.

Q. What was promised them ?

A. They were promised the royal protection.

Q. Did the two chiefs confide in this promise ?

A. Yes ; and they accordingly repaired to London

Q. Did the English government keep its promise ?

A. No ; O'Moore and O'Connor were thrown into prison, and their lands were confiscated and given to English adventurers.

Q. What became of these chiefs ?

A. O'Moore soon died in prison ; O'Connor lingered some weary years in his loathsome dungeon.

Q. What was the next measure of the government ?

A. To push on with rigor the Reformation in Ireland.

Q. How did they begin ?

A. St. Leger was sent as Lord Deputy to Ireland, for the purpose of changing the religion of the Irish.

Q. What means did St. Leger take ?

A. The churches were rifled and sacked, the crucifix, the *Emblem*. of Jesus crucified, the statues of the Most Blessed Virgin, and of the saints, were broken and burned, by these religious, liberty-loving reformers.

Q. Did they stop here ?

A. No ; the Catholic priests were driven out, and

Ireland was now to choose between Henry's Reformation and the Doctrine of Jesus Christ.

Q. How did the Irish act ?

A. They courageously clung to the Religion of St. Patrick, notwithstanding all the power that the emissaries of hell could bring against them.

Q. In what year did Edward the Sixth die ?

A. In 1553.

Q. Who succeeded him on the throne ?

A. He was succeeded by his sister, Mary Tudor.

Q. How did Queen Mary begin her reign ?

A. By acts the most just and beneficial.

Q. What did she abolish ?

A. She abolished the debased currency which her father had introduced, and which her brother had made still baser.

Q. What else did she do ?

A. She paid the debts due by the Crown, and she largely remitted taxes at the same time.

Q. Did Mary favor the Reformation ?

A. No ; having been eye-witness of its baneful effects, she being an upright Queen, could not do otherwise than discountenance both *it* and its adherents.

Q. What had she most at heart ?

A. The restoration of the Catholic Religion, under the influence of which, England had been so happy and great for many ages, and since the abolition of which, she had known nothing but discord and misery.

Q. What means did Mary take to carry out her designs ?

A. She expelled the apostate Bishops and ministers from the churches ; and the Catholic Bishops and priests turned out by Cranmer, were restored to their sees.

Q. What became of Cranmer ?

A. He was deprived of his see and imprisoned as a traitor.

Q. What was again celebrated ?

A. The Holy Mass was once more celebrated in all parts of the kingdom, the people were no longer burnt with red-hot irons, or made slaves on account of their religion.

Q. For what did the people begin to hope ?

A. They began to hope that England would be England again ; not the home of Nero, and that hospitality and charity, would return.

Q. On what was Queen Mary resolved ?

A. To restore the church property taken during her father and brother's reign.

Q. Was this church-plunder carried on to a great extent ?

A. Yes ; there was scarcely a nobleman, or gentleman of any note in the kingdom, who had not in some way or other, soiled his hands with the plunder. (See Cobbett's history of the Reformation).

Q. In what year did Mary die ?

A. In the year 1558.

## CHAPTER XXV.

## The Reign of Elizabeth.

Q. Who was Mary's successor ?

A. Her sister Elizabeth who was crowned the same year.

Q. What did Elizabeth do the following year, 1559 ?

A. She convoked a parliament in Dublin.

Q. What is said of this parliament ?

A. It is said that it was neither Catholic nor Irish.

Q. How many members composed it ?

A. Only Seventy-six. The Irish parliaments generally used to have 220 or 230 members.

Q. What kind of parliament was Elizabeth's ?

A. It was a parliament of 76 picked men.

Q. What do you think, were the acts of that parliament ?

A. If any clergyman did not use the Protestant prayer-book, in public and private, for the first offence, he was deprived of his benefice for one year, and confined six months in jail.

Q. For a second offence, what did he forfeit ?

A. He forfeited his income forever, and was put in jail at the Queen's good pleasure.

Q. And for the third offence ?

A. For the third offence he was imprisoned for life.

Q. What was the punishment of a layman, who

would use any other, than, Queen Elizabeth's prayer-book, ?

A. For the first offence he was imprisoned for one year.

Q. And if caught a second time, what was his fate ?

A. He was imprisoned for life.

Q. What were the people obliged to do by this law ?

A. They were obliged to go to the Protestant Church every Sunday, or pay a fine of 12 pence; that would be about 12 shillings of our present money.

Q. In what state was the Irish Church at this period ?

A. All over the kingdom (says Leland) the people were left without any religious worship.

Q. What did the reformers do, who were sent to Ireland by Queen Elizabeth.

A. The Protestant historian Leland tells us that, they seized all the valuable furniture of the Church, which they actually offered for sale.

Q. What else does Leland tell us ?

A. He tells us there were 220 Catholic parish Churches in Meath, but that in a short time, there were only 105 of them left with the roofs on them.

Q. What else did these hungry adventurers, let loose by Elizabeth, do to the Irish Churches and people ?

A. They robbed and plundered the Irish

Churches, and shed the blood of the Irish Bishops, priests, and people.

Q. What are the words of Dominic a Rosario, author of "The Geraldines" ?

A. " This far-famed English Queen (Elizabeth) has grown drunk on the blood of Christ's martyrs, and like a tigress she has hunted down our Irish Catholics ; exceeding in ferocity and wanton cruelty, the Emperors of Pagan Rome. "

Q. What order was promulgated ?

A. A Royal order was promulgated, that all should renounce the Catholic faith, yield up the priests, and receive from the heretical ministers the morality and tenets of the Gospel.

Q. What means were employed to enforce this law ?

A. All the constitutional laws enacted by Elizabeth, which consisted of hot-irons, racks, ropes, gibbets, and ripping knives, were employed.

Q. Whom did Elizabeth appoint as Lord-Lieutenant of Ireland ?

A. She appointed the Earl of Sussex.

Q. Sussex, on returning to England, to whom did he intrust the government of Ireland ?

A. To Sir Henry Sidney.

Q. Who was at this time acquiring great dominion in Ulster ?

A. John O'Neill, an Irish chieftain.

Q. Did Sidney call O'Neill to an account for his proceeding ?

A. Yes; he invited him to the English camp for the purpose of a conference.

Q. Did O'Neill accept the invitation?

A. No; remembering how O'Moore and O'Connor had been trapped, he wisely declined.

Q. What was his answer to Sidney?

A. He excused himself by saying, he was engaged in having his child christened with due pomp.

Q. What invitation did he send to Sidney?

A. He invited him to attend the ceremony, as the infant's god-father.

Q. Did Sidney comply?

A. He did; and was much surprised at the courtly magnificence, with which the Irish chieftain entertained him.

Q. How did they arrange the dispute between O'Neill and the government?

A. O'Neill by a statement of his wrongs, made a favorable impression upon Sidney, who advised him to rely for full justice on Elizabeth's sense of honor and right.

Q. Did O'Neill agree to leave matters to the Queen's decision?

A. He did; and he and Sidney parted from each other on terms of friendship.

Q. Did Sussex soon return from England?

A. He did.

Q. How did he treat the priests?

A. He expelled them from their parishes, and

Protestant clergymen, who had come in great numbers from England, were put in their places.

Q. Where did O'Neill set out for ?

A. He set out for London attended by a band of *gallowlasses*, whose appearance at the court of Elizabeth excited great curiosity.

Q. How did Elizabeth receive him ?

A. With the most flattering courtesy and favor, and promised to support his claims to the best of her power.

Q. Did Elizabeth keep this promise ?

A. No ; notwithstanding the manifest loyalty of his conduct, she listened to his enemies who impeached his intentions.

Q. What did Elizabeth say ?

A. " If O'Neill rebels, " said the queen, " it will be all the better for my servants, for, then, there will be estates enough for them."

Q. His enemies being emboldened by the queen's expression, on what did they determine ?

A. They determined to goad O'Neill into rebellion.

Q. How did they commence ?

A. Sir Henry Sidney who was now Lord Deputy, established a garrison of English troops at Derry.

Q. Did O'Neill complain of this ?

A. He did, and looked on it as an insult to him, since the country was tranquil at the time ; no troops were needed to check disturbance.

Q. What did this act of the Lord Deputy show ?



A. It showed a want of confidence in the good faith of the promises, O'Neill had made to the Queen's government.

Q. On what did O'Neill resolve ?

A. To get rid of the English garrison.

---

CHAPTER XXVI.

The Reign of Elizabeth.—(continued).

Q. How did he manage to do it ?

A. He contrived to make them begin hostilities, and then sent to the Lord Deputy a bitter letter, complaining of their conduct.

Q. What did O'Neill propose at the same time ?

A. He proposed to hold a conference at Dundalk, to adjust all difficulties.

Q. Did the conference take place ?

A. No ; before it could take place the powder magazine at Derry was blown up, and the garrison was obliged to quit the town.

Q. Did O'Neill, then, carry on the war against the English ?

A. He did, but ineffectually.

Q. How so ?

A. Because he found himself abandoned by the chiefs, on whose support he had relied with confidence.

Q. Was their defection owing to English intrigue ?

A. Yes; O'Neill found to his cost, that the garrison had been plotting against him, from the first moment of their settlement in Derry.

Q. What was his fate ?

A. He perished by the treachery of Piers, an English officer, who induced the Scotch commandant of a garrison, stationed at Clan-hu-boy, to take advantage of a preconcerted quarrel at a banquet, and murder O'Neill and his followers.

Q. What reward did Piers receive for his treachery ?

A. On sending O'Neill's head to the Lord Deputy, he received the sum of one thousand marks from the government.

Q. What became of O'Neill's estates ?

A. They were divided between the queen's officers.

Q. Who was the next Irish lord, the English resolved to destroy ?

A. The Earl of Desmond.

Q. What did they do to Desmond ?

A. They sent him as a prisoner to the Tower of London, where he was kept in captivity for many years.

Q. What were Elizabeth's plans with regard to Ulster ?

A. She resolved to despoil the old proprietors of their inheritance, and to plant the Province with English colonies.

Q. Who was the chief Englishman that visited Ireland, to execute this scheme ?

A. Walter, Earl of Essex.

Q. What was his character ?

A. Treacherous and sanguinary; he did not hesitate to commit any crime which he thought might weaken the Irish.

Q. State an instance of his treachery ?

A. He invited a chieftain of O'Neill's blood to a banquet, under the semblance of friendship, and then took the opportunity to murder his unsuspecting guest.

Q. Did the scheme of planting Ulster with English colonies succeed ?

A. Not to any considerable extent until the next reign.

Q. What remarkable incident occurred in 1578 ?

A. Fitz-Maurice, one of the Geraldines of Desmond, rebelled.

Q. What did he seek ?

A. He sought foreign aid against the English government.

Q. Did he succeed ?

A. He received no support from foreign powers but a small band of Spaniards, whom he headed in an invasion of Ireland.

Q. Did the little armament land in Ireland.

A. Yes; but their ships were seized by an English war vessel.

Q. Was their insurrection sanctioned by the Earl of Desmond.

A. No; he had been released from the prison into which he had been unjustly thrown, and carefully avoided any step by which he might again incur the wrath of the government.

Q. Did this prudence avail to protect him ?

A. No ; for the English government was resolved to destroy him ?

Q. What was Desmond's offence ?

A. The greatness of his estates, which the friends of the government were resolved to seize and divide among themselves.

Q. In what manner did the government carry on its war against Desmond ?

A. With the utmost ferocity and cruelty.

Q. How so ?

A. Because it was really a succession of massacres committed on the people of that territory, diversified with the destruction of their houses and the wasting of their substance.

Q. Did any succors arrive to Desmond ?

A. Yes; a Spanish force of 700 men landed at Golden Fort, on the coast of Kerry.

Q. What was their fate ?

A. They were blockaded in the fort, and then massacred in cold blood, by the orders of Sir Walter Raleigh.

Q. How did Desmond act, surrounded as he now was by enemies ?

**A.** He made a gallant dash and took the town of Youghal.

**Q.** What was his fate at last ?

**A.** His forces were overwhelmed by numbers, and he himself was murdered by a traitor.

**Q.** What was done with his head ?

**A.** It was sent to the queen, and by her orders exposed on a spear on London Bridge.

**Q.** Who was Hugh O'Neill ?

**A.** Nephew to the late Earl of Tyrone.

**Q.** What requests did he ask of the government ?

**A.** He petitioned for leave to take his seat in the House of Lords as Earl of Tyrone ; and he also prayed that his estates might be restored to him.

**Q.** What was his claim on the English government.

**A.** His uniform loyalty to the crown.

**Q.** Were his petitions granted by Elizabeth ?

**A.** Yes, they were.

**Q.** Did he continue long in the quiet enjoyment of his territories ?

**A.** No ; the officers of the English government resolved to have his estates divided among themselves, and they left no means untried to drive him to rebel.

**Q.** Mean while, what crimes did Sir William Fitz-William, Lord-Lieutenant, commit in Ulster ?

**A.** He marched into Monaghan, seized on the chief of the McMahons, tried and convicted him

on a false charge of high treason, by a jury of common soldiers.

Q. What was the fate of the Irish chief?

A. He was murdered on the spot by the English soldiers.

Q. What did they do to bring O'Neill to open war?

A. They drove him by a variety of oppressions and petty hostilities, to attack the English garrison at Blackwater.

Q. Who was sent to oppose O'Neill?

A. Sir John Norris with a force of 2,000 men.

Q. Was O'Neill successful in his attack on the garrison?

A. Yes; and after a hot contest, he obtained possession of the fort, as well as of the City of Armagh, which the English garrison evacuated without a struggle.

---

## CHAPTER XXVII.

### The Reign of Elizabeth (concluded).

Q. What was the loss upon the English side at Blackwater.

A. The English lost 1,500 men, including many officers; the Irish secured 34 standards, besides the entire arms, artillery, and ammunition of their enemies.

Q. Was the English army totally destroyed?

A. No; there was a portion of it saved by the valor of an Irish chieftain, named O'Reilly.

Q. How came that?

A. O'Reilly joined the royal cause against O'Neill, and at the head of his clan, covered the retreat of the survivors of the English army.

Q. How did O'Neill then occupy himself?

A. In uniting together as many of his countrymen as he possibly could, for the purpose of resisting England.

Q. What other means did he take?

A. He sent ambassadors to Spain, to solicit the aid of King Philip.

Q. What measures did Elizabeth take?

A. She sent an army of 20,000 men to Ireland, under the command of the Earl of Essex.

Q. Did Essex crush O'Neill?

A. No; he marched to the south to quell the insurrection, which had spread into Munster.

Q. What was the policy of the Irish?

A. They avoided a general engagement, but frequently defeated detached parties of the English army.

Q. Which was the most memorable of those triumphs?

A. It was a signal victory won by the O'Moores of Leix, over a large body of Essex's cavalry.

Q. What name did the Irish give the place, where this battle was fought?

A. On account of the number of feathers lost

by the English troops in the engagement, the Irish named the place ; " The Pass of Plumes."

Q. Was there any other noted conflict in Leinster ?

A. Yes ; the O'Byrnes overthrew another detachment of Essex's army ; although the advantage in numbers was on the English side.

Q. How did Elizabeth receive the news of these reverses ?

A. She was enraged against Essex, and ordered him to march to the north of Ireland.

Q. What was the fate of Sir Conyers Clifford ?

A. While leading an army northward, to the aid of Essex, he fell into an ambuscade prepared for him by O'Rourke, and was slain.

Q. How did the campaign of Essex end ?

A. In an amicable conference held with O'Neill, on a rising ground in view of both armies.

Q. What was the result of this conference ?

A. A truce for six weeks, during which Essex went to England.

Q. To whose command was the English army then entrusted ?

A. To Sir George Carew, and Lord Mountjoy.

Q. How did those leaders conduct the war ?

A. With great barbarity, especially Carew, whose natural disposition was cruel and ferocious.

Q. What did Carew order his troops to do ?

A. To burn all the houses in O'Neill's country,



and put the inhabitants to the sword; he also ordered them to destroy the growing crops.

Q. Did O'Neill receive help from Spain?

A. Yes; 2000 Spaniards under Don-Juan d'Avilla, landed in the south of Ireland.

Q. Were these Spanish auxiliaries of any use to O'Neill?

A. No; they were rather an incumbrance; he being obliged to march an army to their relief from the north, a task of great difficulty and danger.

Q. What was the issue of the struggle?

A. O'Neill, urged by the foolish impatience of the Spanish commander, risked a premature attack upon Mountjoy; which, however, might have been successful, if his plans had not been betrayed by spies to the English general.

Q. Was Mountjoy victorious?

A. Yes; notwithstanding the valiant exertions of O'Neill to recover the day.

Q. Whither did the Irish lords who had been in arms against the queen, direct their course?

A. To Spain, where many of their posterity are to be found at the present day.

Q. What was the ultimate fate of O'Neill?

A. His country being wasted by fire and sword, and unable to procure provisions for his brave but famishing army, he entered into terms of peace with the English.

Q. What did the Irish war cost Elizabeth?

A. Three millions sterling, and the destruction of the flower of her army.

Q. Did Elizabeth subjugate Ireland ?

A. No ; the subjugation of Ireland has never been accomplished even to this day.

Q. In what year did Elizabeth die ?

A. In the year 1603.

---

## CHAPTER XXVIII.

### The Reign of James the First.

Q. Who succeeded Elizabeth on the throne ?

A. James, King of Scotland.

Q. How did James treat the northern chiefs, O'Neill and O'Donnell ?

A. He confirmed the former in his title of Earl of Tyrone ; and made O'Donnell Earl of Tyrconnell.

Q. What evil measures did this king inflict upon Ireland ?

A. He re-enacted the severe penal laws against the Catholics.

Q. What did he try to abolish ?

A. The laws and customs of the country.

Q. What did he substitute in their stead ?

A. He substituted English laws and customs.

Q. What authority was then permitted ?

A. No other authority but that of the king, was permitted throughout the land.

Q. To what project did the king now turn his thoughts ?

A. To that of dispossessing all the Catholics of

Ulster of their estates, and supplanting them with Scotch and English adventurers. This was called the Plantation of Ulster.

Q. What was the result ?

A. Millions of acres of the finest land in Ireland, were taken at one stroke from the Irish, and given to the Scotch and English partisans of King James.

Q. In those new land-grants, what was expressly stipulated ?

A. That their proprietors should be English or Scotch Protestants.

Q. What were these land-robbers required to do ?

A. To swear that they would not employ a single Irishman, or Catholic, nor let them come near them.

Q. Were the other provinces subject to the same wholesale confiscation ?

A. Yes ; but not to such an extent.

Q. Could Catholics remain in possession of their lands ?

A. In some cases as a special favor they were permitted to remain, if they took the oath of supremacy, if they worked well for their masters, and if they paid double the rent the Protestants had to pay.

Q. What became of the great lords of Ulster, O'Neill and O'Donnell ?

A. Being accused of high treason, they fled to the Continent.

Q. What was James's next act ?

A. He summoned an Irish parliament, in order to obtain the sanction of law to his enormous wickedness.

Q. Did the parliament ratify the criminal acts of the king ?

A. Yes ; James packed its members in order to secure a majority in his favor.

Q. How did he manage to do this ?

A. He created forty new boroughs in one day, and the members returned for these boroughs were instructed to vote for the crown.

Q. What was the next scheme of plunder projected by the king ?

A. He issued what was called a " commission for the discovery of defective titles. "

Q. What was the object of this commission ?

A. To detect pretended defects in the titles of the Irish land owners, in order that the crown might seize their estates.

Q. Who was placed at the head of this commission ?

A. Sir William Parsons.

Q. What was Parson's mode of proceeding ?

A. Torture and subornation of perjury.

Q. Relate an instance of this ?

A. In the celebrated case of the Byrnes of " the Ranelaghs," he suborned witnesses to swear an accusation of high treason against those gentlemen.

Q. Did the witnesses swear willingly ?

A. No; but Sir William forced them to swear up to the mark, by the infliction of the most horrible tortures.

Q. What did he do with a witness, named Archer?

A. He had him placed on a gridiron over a charcoal fire, burned in several parts of his body with hot irons, and barbarously flogged.

Q. Why did Sir William inflict such cruel tortures on Archer?

A. To compel him to swear against the two Byrnes, whom the court had resolved to rob of their estates.

Q. Did Archer yield?

A. Yes; when he was tortured beyond endurance, he promised to swear all that Parsons wished; and by this diabolical proceeding the proprietors were robbed of their inheritance.

Q. Did King James intend to confiscate the lands of Connaught?

A. Yes; but ere he could effect his purpose, he was seized with an ague and died.

## CHAPTER XXIX.

### The Reign of Charles the First.

Q. Who succeeded King James?

A. His son Charles the First.

Q. How did Charles treat his Irish subjects?

A. He followed in his father's footsteps; bigoted.

and hostile to Catholics; faithless to his engagements, and persevering in plundering the Irish.

Q. What did the Protestant bishops declare?

A. They declared that, there should be no faith kept with "Papists".

Q. Whilst these religious liberty-loving bishops were thus encouraging persecution, how was the court employed?

A. In the wholesale plunder of Irish estates.

Q. In 1628 what step did the Catholic nobility and gentry of Ireland take?

A. They held a meeting in Dublin, at which many Protestants of rank and influence attended.

Q. What measure was agreed on at that meeting?

A. To present a petition to the king, requesting his majesty to concede to his Irish subjects, certain privileges termed "graces".

Q. What were the graces asked?

A. Permission to live in their own country, and to worship God according to the dictates of their consciences.

Q. What offer did the Irish make the king, on the condition of his granting the "graces"?

A. They offered him one hundred and twenty thousand pounds, an enormous sum for those days.

Q. Did Charles take the money?

A. Yes; he took it.

Q. Did he grant the graces?

A. He did not; to his eternal disgrace—he broke his word with the Irish Catholics, after taking twelve thousand pounds in an acknowledgment of his promise.

Q. Whom did Charles appoint Lord-Lieutenant of Ireland?

A. Earl Stafford, a man according to the king's own heart, base and treacherous.

Q. What did Stafford urge Charles to do?

A. To break faith with the Irish, and then put himself forward to bear all the odium of the royal treachery.

Q. What was the next action of this base man, Stafford?

A. He instituted a commission, for the express purpose of confiscating the whole Province of Connaught.

Q. What did he call this commission?

A. "The commission of defective titles." The commissioners were to inquire into the titles that each man had to his property.

Q. What was their intention in acting thus?

A. It was with the express and avowed purpose of finding a flaw in the titles, if they could, and then confiscate the lands to the Crown of England.

Q. How did Stafford and his commissioners work?

A. The proprietors were put on trial to show their titles. The judges were bribed by the promise of four shillings to the pound on the first

year's rent of the estates, to be paid them in the event of a verdict being found in favor of the king; the jurors were also bribed; and the people were over-awed during the trials by the presence of a strong military force.

Q. Did these precautions always procure a verdict for the crown?

A. They usually did; there were, however, a few instances in which the honesty of the jurors stood out against both terror and corruption.

Q. How were such conscientious jurors treated?

A. They were fined, pilloried, their ears cut off, their tongues bored through, and their foreheads marked with hot irons.

Q. On what authority do you state these facts?

A. On that of the journals of the Irish House of Commons, Vol. 1, P. 307.

Q. What did Stafford institute in Ireland?

A. He established a tribunal which he called the "Court of Wards".

Q. For what purpose did he institute it?

A. This tribunal was instituted in order to get the heirs of the Catholic gentry, and educate them in the Protestant religion.

Q. What is to be remarked about this "Court of Wards"?

A. It is to this "Court of Wards" that we owe the significant fact, that some of the most ancient and best names in Ireland—the names of men whose ancestors fought for faith and father-land,



are now Protestants, and enemies of their Catholic fellow-countrymen.

Q. What circumstances induced Charles to call Stafford to England ?

A. The troubles which violently raged in Scotland, required the aid and council of his ablest ministers to quell them.

Q. What happened to Stafford as soon as he arrived in England.

A. The parliament now in rebellion against the king made him prisoner.

Q. What was his fate ?

A. In the same year 1640, Stafford's head was cut off. Thus ended a man whose principles were based on deceit, cunning and treachery.

---

## CHAPTER XXX.

### The Civil War of 1641.

Q. What caused the Irish civil war of 1641 ?

A. The Irish were compelled to take up arms, to defend themselves against the intolerable oppression of the government, which tried to exterminate their race and religion.

Q. Who headed the insurrection in Ulster ?

A. Sir Phelim O'Neill, at the head of 30,000 men.

Q. What proclamation did Sir Phelim issue ?

A. A proclamation stating that he intended no

harm to the king, or any of his subjects, English or Scotch, but, that his sole object was the defence of Irish liberty.

Q. What did he further add ?

A. He added that, whatever damage would be done to any one should be repaired.

Q. What was the date of this proclamation ?

A. This proclamation was dated "Dungannon 23rd of October, 1641," and signed Phelim O'Neill.

Q. What took place during this rebellion ?

A. The horrible massacre of the Catholics, who retired for safety to Island Magee, by the English Puritans, and Scotch garrison of Carrickfergus, in which three thousand innocent persons were slaughtered.

Q. Has it not often been said, that there was a cruel massacre of Protestants committed by the Irish Catholics in 1641 ?

A. Yes; that assertion has been made.

Q. What is the character of that assertion ?

A. It is a thorough and impudent falsehood.

Q. What! was there no general massacre of the Protestants committed by the Irish ?

A. None whatever.

Q. What is your reason for denying that there was a massacre ?

A. The total absence of historical proof that any such massacre took place.

Q. Was there, then, no blood shed by the Irish ?

A. Yes; there was blood shed; but it was in fair and open war, not by massacre.

Q. How do you show the total absence of sufficient proof that a massacre took place?

A. Because no mention whatsoever is made of any massacre at all in the government documents of the period; in which, if it had really happened, it would have infallibly been recorded.

Q. Of what documents do you speak?

A. The proclamations and despatches of the Lords Justices at Dublin Castle.

Q. What is the date of the falsely alleged massacre?

A. The 23rd of October, 1641.

Q. What are the dates of the despatches of the Lords Justices.

A. The 25th of October, 25th of November, 27th of November, and the 23 of December, all in the same year.

Q. Do the despatches bearing the above dates, accuse the Irish Catholics of any crime?

A. Yes; they accuse them of various acts of turbulence and plunder, but they do not say one single word of any general massacre of the Protestants.

Q. What do you infer from this total silence on the subject?

A. That no massacre can have possibly occurred, for if there had been one, it would have been

mentioned in the despatches drawn up by those bitter enemies, who were always eager for an opportunity of making criminal charges, against the Irish people.

**Q.** Who were the Lords Justices of Ireland at this time ?

**A.** Sir William Parsons, (The same who had contrived the horrid crime perpetrated on the Byrnes) and Sir John Barlose.

**Q.** How did those two lords act ?

**A.** They published a proclamation, charging the great body of the Irish Catholics, with being engaged in a conspiracy, against the state.

**Q.** What was their object in branding the Irish, as conspirators ?

**A.** Having possession of their estates, it was in their interest to blacken the character of the Irish and brand them as rebels.

**Q.** For what did the Catholics of Ireland petition the king ?

**A.** For the total repeal of the penal laws against their religion and liberty.

**Q.** What did the Protestants demand ?

**A.** That all the penal laws against the Catholics, should be enforced with the greatest rigor.

**Q.** How did Charles treat the Catholic deputation ?

**A.** He gave them civil words and then committed the decision of their claims to the Earl of Ormond.

**Q.** What was Ormond's policy ?

A. Procrastination ; and he postponed all final settlement of the question, until the Puritans acquired power.

Q. Why did Ormond delay the settlement ?

A. Because he was resolved not to grant the demands of the Irish Catholics.

Q. What was the king's conduct throughout the entire negotiation ?

A. It was marked by duplicity and faithlessness ; trying to extort as much as possible from the Irish, on the faith of solemn promises which he never intended to fulfil.

Q. Through whom were those solemn promises of King Charles conveyed to the Irish Confederates ?

A. Through the Earl of Glamorgan.

Q. Did Ormond sign a treaty with the Confederates ?

A. He did, on the 28th of May, 1646.

Q. What induced him to do so ?

A. The pressing necessity of the king's affairs, which were every day becoming more desperate, in consequence of the delay.

Q. By whom were the Irish Catholics joined ?

A. By the English Catholics of the "Pale".

Q. What did the Catholics next do ?

A. They called together in a synod, all the Catholic Bishops, who, with the Lords gentry, and Commoners of the land, met together and founded what is called the "Confederation of Kilkenny."

Q. What was formed ?

A. A regular government was formed, the Supreme Council consisted of three Archbishops, two Bishops, four Lords and fifteen Commoners.

Q. What was the object of this Council ?

A. To watch over the country, to make laws, to inspect the army, and above all to prevent cruelty, robbery and murder.

---

## CHAPTER XXXI.

### The Confederation of Kilkenny.

Q. In what year did the Confederation of Kilkenny take place.

A. In 1642.

Q. What was established ?

A. A mint was actually established, and money coined for the Irish Nation.

Q. Under whom did they establish an army ?

A. Under Mountcashel and General Preston, who in a short time after was succeeded by the glorious and immortal Owen Roe O'Neill.

Q. What was their success ?

A. During the first months they were crowned with success, and most of the principal cities opened their gates to them.

Q. What was the conduct of the Irish soldiers on the surrender of those cities ?

A. It was humane and Christian. What a contrast with their brutal and barbarous enemies !

Q. How so ?

A. The garrisons were saved from slaughter ; and the moment they laid down their arms, their lives were as secure as any man in the ranks of the Irish army.

Q. Then, no unnecessary blood was shed by the Irish ?

A. No ; not with any sort of countenance on the part of the government of the country, that is to say, the Supreme Council of Kilkenny.

Q. What is to be remarked about the " Supreme Council of Kilkenny." ?

A. It is remarkable that there was not a single law enacted by it, which did not tend to prevent bloodshed.

Q. In what state was England during this time ?

A. In a state of rebellion, and strange to say the so-called " Irish rebels" were the only real hope, which King Charles had to rely on, in his conflict with his disloyal Scotch and English subjects.

Q. In what did the Irish leaders and the Lords of the " Pale" agree ?

A. They agreed to act in concert, and one of the latter, Colonel Plunket, suggested the seizure of Dublin Castle.

Q. Was the attempt to seize the Castle made ?

A. Yes ; but was frustrated by a betrayal of the plan, in consequence of an indiscretion of one of the leaders.

Q. What effect had this on the Protestant party ?

A. The rage of the Protestant party knew no bounds. The Castle was put in a state of defence, troops were ordered in all directions, and proclamations were issued.

Q. Whom did they place in command of the English forces in Dublin ?

A. Sir Charles Coote, a man well known to every Irishman, for his cruelty.

Q. What did Coote do ?

A. He set out on an expedition of burning, plundering, and massacring, sparing neither man, woman, nor child.

Q. What were the orders given to Coote by Sir William Barlose ?

A. Barlose ordered him to burn all the corn, and to put men, women, and children to the sword.

Q. What did Coote do at Clontarf ?

A. After burning the town, he butchered sixteen towns-people, men and women, besides three suckling infants.

Q. The inhabitants of the village of Bullock being alarmed at what took place at Clontarf, what did they do ?

A. To avoid the fury of the soldiers they put out to sea.

Q. What followed ?

A. Being pursued by soldiers in boats, they were overtaken and thrown overboard; the number being in men, women, and children fifty-six.

Q. By whom are these facts stated ?



A. By Lord Clarendon, who was no friend of the Irish.

Q. State the words of one of those edicts issued from the Castle of Dublin, and which tells in what spirit the English waged war against the Irish ?

A. " It is resolved that it is fit that his Lordship," (and, mind, this was given to the Marquis of Ormond),—" that his Lordship do endeavor to wound, kill, slay, and destroy, by all the ways and means that he may, all the said rebels, their adherents and relatives ; and burn, spoil, waste, consume, destroy, and demolish, all the places, towns, and houses where the rebels are, or have been relieved, or harbored ; and kill all the men there inhabiting capable of bearing arms. "

" GIVEN AT THE CASTLE OF DUBLIN,  
ON THE 23rd DAY OF FEB. 1641. "

Q. What did Sir Arthur Loftus, Governor of Naas do ?

A. He marched through the country with a troop of horse, and foot soldiers, and killed such of the Irish as fell in his way, without troubling himself to inquire whether they were rebels or not.

Q. On what other occasion did this demon, Sir Arthur Loftus, commit an act of wholesale slaughter ?

A. On an occasion when the inhabitants of several villages, taking alarm, had sheltered themselves in a large field of furze.

**Q.** How did Sir Arthur execute this cruel and barbarous act.

**A.** Having surrounded the field with his soldiers, he ordered them to set fire to the furze on all sides, and thousands of innocent people, men, women, and children were burned to death.

**Q.** What does Lord Castlehaven tell us ?

**A.** " I saw, " says he, " the bodies and furze still burning " ?

**Q.** Was it only on land that the Irish were pursued by those Puritan demons ?

**A.** They were also pursued on sea ; and those who were captured, were tied back to back and cast into the foaming billows.

**Q.** What act was passed on the 24th of October, 1641, by the Lords and Commons of England ?

**A.** An act " that no quarters should be given to any Irishman, or Papist, born in Ireland." All the laws made by England, for the government of Ireland during those memorable ages of English civilization, were dictated in the same barbarous and sanguinary strain.

## CHAPTER XXXII.

### General Owen Roe O'Neill lands in Ireland.

**Q.** In what year did Owen Roe O'Neill land in Ireland ?

**A.** In July, 1642.

Q. What did Sir Phelim O'Neill do ?

A. He went to meet Owen Roe, and resigned the command of the Army to him ; all promised fairly for the National cause.

Q. Who was Owen Roe O'Neill ?

A. He was one of the most distinguished officers in the Spanish army, and his military skill and political wisdom were needed in the position, in which he was now placed.

Q. What did General Owen Roe O'Neill do ?

A. He organized an army, drilled and equipped it, though imperfectly ; but he was a host in himself.

Q. What did Owen Roe do the year after landing ?

A. He drew up his army to meet Gen. Monroe, and his English forces, at the ford of Benburb, on the Blackwater.

Q. When did the battle commence ?

A. The battle began on the morning, of the 4th of June, and raged with unabating fury during the early part of the day.

Q. Before the evening sun had set, what did the spectators behold ?

A. They beheld England's main and best army flying in confusion.

Q. What else ?

A. Thousands of her best soldiers were seen stretched upon the field, and the ford of Benburb choked with others.

Q. What was the attitude of O'Neill and his Irish soldiers ?

A. O'Neill and his soldiers stood triumphant upon the field, which his genius and valor had won.

Q. What number was engaged on each side ?

A. O'Neill's force amounted to 5000 men, Monroe had 8000 veteran English troops.

Q. How many of the English army fell in this memorable battle ?

A. History records 3,243 of the English, and of the Irish, 70 killed and 100 wounded.

Q. Whom did O'Neill capture ?

A. Lord Ardes, and 21 Scotch officers, with 32 standards, 1,500 draught horses, and all the guns and tents of the enemy.

Q. What became of Monroe ?

A. Monroe fled in panic to Lisburn, and thence to Carrickfergus, where he shut himself up until he obtained reinforcements.

Q. To whom did O'Neill send the captured colors ?

A. To the Pope's Nuncio at Limerick, by whom they were solemnly placed in the choir of St. Mary's Cathedral.

Q. To where were they afterwards sent ?

A. At the request of Pope Innocent they were sent to Rome.

Q. How did they celebrate this victory at the Confederate Capital ?

A. With great solemnity. They chanted the Te Deum on the occasion.

Q. What did Monroe say in his despatch after the battle.

A. "The Lord of Hosts" said Monroe, had "rubbed shame on our faces, till once we are humbled."

Q. What had O'Neill emblazoned on his banners ?

A. He had emblazoned on his banners the Cross and Keys, with the Red Hand of Ulster.

Q. In whose cause was the Irish army fighting ?

A. In the cause of their Country, and King Charles, whom, his own countrymen (the Scotch) betrayed and sold to the Parliamentary party.

Q. What did the Puritan party do, when they became predominant in England ?

A. They dethroned their lawful sovereign, and imbrued their hands in his blood.

Q. You have said that Gen. O'Neill was on the part of the king, on whose side was Gen. Monroe ?

A. Monroe was on the side of the Parliamentarians.

Q. Meanwhile what were the king's fortunes in England ?

A. Most disastrous. He met with a succession of defeats.

Q. Into whose hands did King Charles surrender himself ?

A. Into the hands of his countrymen, the Scotch Puritans.

Q. What did his countrymen do with him ?

A. To their eternal shame, they sold him to the English parliament for £400,000.

Q. What was the fate of King Charles the First?

A. He was beheaded by the Parliamentarians on the 30th of January, 1649.

---

### CHAPTER XXXIII.

#### Oliver Cromwell sent to Ireland—Reign of Terror.

Q. What monster in human shape was sent to Ireland about this time?

A. The cruel and inhuman Oliver Cromwell.

Q. Who was Oliver Cromwell?

A. He was one of the Parliamentarian generals.

Q. In what year did Cromwell come to Ireland?

A. In 1649; the year in which Charles the First was murdered.

Q. What place did Cromwell lay siege to?

A. He laid siege to Drogheda, with a force of 10,000 men, and a well appointed battering artillery.

Q. Who commanded the town?

A. Sir Arthur Aston with 2000 soldiers.

Q. What did Cromwell do on coming near the town?

A. He sent a summons to the garrison to surrender.

Q. How was it received by the governor?

A. It was peremptorily rejected.

Q. What followed ?

A. A bombardment was accordingly commenced.

Q. What effect had Cromwell's large guns on the walls of the city ?

A. The walls being unable to resist such fire, a large breach was soon made in them.

Q. What did Cromwell do on seeing the breach ?

A. He undertook to take the city by storm ?

Q. How did he succeed ?

A. He was repulsed twice with great slaughter.

Q. What did he then do ?

A. He rallied his men a third time and went at their head.

Q. After a vigorous resistance what befell the Irish ?

A. Their brave Colonel Wall was killed.

Q. What did the soldiers then do ?

A. They surrendered the city under solemn promise of quarter.

Q. Did Cromwell observe his solemn promise ?

A. No ; on entering the town he gave orders to his soldiers, for the indiscriminate massacre of the garrison, and every man, woman, and child in that large city.

Q. How long did this inhuman massacre continue ?

A. During five days, the Puritan soldiers spared neither age nor sex.

Q. Where did a number of aged men, women,

and children seek refuge from the brutal soldiery ?

A. In St. Peter's Church.

Q. What did Cromwell then do ?

A. He and his soldiers, with demoniac fury, rushed into the church and massacred those innocent people, so that, not one of them escaped.

Q. What did Cromwell say in his despatch to the parliament, regarding the massacre ?

A. In this very place, " The Church " says Cromwell, " nearly one thousand were put to the sword."

Q. How did the parliament acknowledge his service on this occasion ?

A. For the unparalleled brutality displayed by Cromwell on this occasion, he received a vote of thanks from parliament.

Q. What more ?

A. A day of thanksgiving was observed throughout England, in honor of this inhuman and brutal deed.

Q. What was decreed by the English parliament ?

A. It was decreed " that the House does approve of the execution done at Drogheda, as an act of justice to themselves, and of mercy to others, who might be warned thereby."

Q. What did the Earl of Ormond declare ?

A. He declared that Cromwell, on this occasion, had exceeded himself, and any thing he had ever heard of, in breach of faith and bloody inhumanity.



Q. What does Lord Clarendon tell us ?

A. He tell us that during the five days, whilst the streets of Drogheda ran with human blood, " Cromwell's soldiers executed all manner of cruelty, and put the inhabitants who were Irish, man, wo- man, and child to the sword. "

Q. How many of the brave defenders of Drogheda survived ?

A. Only thirty of them survived, and they were all sold as slaves.

Q. To what city did Cromwell next go ?

A. To Wexford, where all the horrors of Drogheda were renewed.

Q. How did Cromwell obtain possession of the city of Wexford ?

A. By the treachery of one of Ormond's officers

Q. How did Cromwell act, when he entered the city ?

A. He put the garrison, consisting of 2000 men, to the sword.

Q. What else did he do ?

A. He massacred 300 women, with their children, who assembled at the Cross in the public square of the city.

Q. What did those women imagine, when plac- ing themselves and their tender babes under the arms of the Cross ?

A. They thought that Cromwell, though all ter- rible as he was, would respect the *sign of man's redemption*, and spare their lives. Oh ! how vain

the thought ! Three hundred poor defenceless women, screaming for mercy under the Cross of Christ ; were butchered by Cromwell and his barbarous soldiers ; and in his despatch to the English parliament, thanked God "*for that great mercy,*" as he called it.

Q. What was the excuse given for these atrocious barbarities ?

A. That of striking terror into the hearts of the Irish, to prevent them from further opposition.

Q. After Cromwell had glutted himself with Irish blood, what did he do ?

A. He shipped 80,000, some say 100,000 men, to the sugar plantations of the Barbadoes, there to work as slaves.

Q. In six years time, how many of these 80,000 men were alive ?

A. Such was their treatment, that in six years, 20 men were living out of the 80,000.

Q. What else did Cromwell do ?

A. He collected 6000 Irish boys and shipped them off also, to the Barbadoes ; there to languish and die before they could attain to manhood.

Q. When the Revd. John Grace visited these islands in 1666, what did he find ?

A. He found no fewer than 12000 Irish scattered amongst them, and they were treated as slaves.

---

## CHAPTER XXXIV.

**The Reign of Terror (Continued).**

Q. What were the chief measures of Cromwell's Irish government ?

A. Severe laws against the Catholic Religion and priesthood.

Q. On the 6th of January, 1653, what was published ?

A. An edict of persecution was published against the Catholic clergy.

Q. What were the clergy both regular and secular commanded ?

A. They were commanded under penalty of treason, to depart from the kingdom within twenty days.

Q. If they returned what was the consequence ?

A. They incurred the penalties specified in the 27th of Queen Elizabeth.

Q. What were those penalties ?

A. They were " to be hanged, cut down while yet alive, beheaded, quartered, embowelled, and burned ; the head to be set on a spike, and exposed in the most public place. "

Q. What else did this edict command ?

A. It commanded that every person who, after the expiration of the twenty days thus specified, should harbor, or receive into his house any priest, " would incur the confiscation of his property, and be put to death without hope of mercy. "

Q. How was this decree carried into execution ?

A. With the greatest rigor, and no mercy was shown to whosoever was found to violate it.

Q. To discover the clergy what was done ?

A. Spies and informers scoured the country on every side, impelled partly by hatred to religion, and partly by the proffered reward.

Q. What was the proffered reward ?

A. Five pounds, were held out by government, for the apprehension of a priest, (the same price that was offered for the head of a wolf.)

Q. What did the informer moreover receive ?

A. He was put in possession of the third part of the property of the person, on whose lands he should be discovered.

Q. Was the profession of informer, then, an honorable one ?

A. Yes ; so it was declared, and such persons were, by virtue of the edict, to receive the special favor of the Crown.

Q. To what were those informers promoted ?

A. They were promoted to offices and dignities, *as men well deserving of the State.*

Q. How does an eminent writer (M. Morison) depict the sad state of Ireland, at this period, 1653 ?

A. He says ; " Our country, once the Island of saints, was now wholly become a prey to the persecutors. As Judea of old its cities were desolate, its altars were overthrown, everything sacred was

trampled on, its priests were led to the scaffold, and the inhabitants that yet survived were subjected to a worse than Assyrian captivity."

Q. How does the same author continue ?

A. He continues thus,—“ Neither the Israelites were more cruelly persecuted by Pharoah, nor the innocents by Herod, nor the Christians by Nero, or any other of the pagan tyrants, than were the Roman Catholics of Ireland at this fatal juncture.”

Q. What do other contemporary writers tell us ?

A. They tell us, that it would be difficult to find any parallel for all the sufferings, which our country thus endured; everywhere lamentation, and death in a thousand shapes.

Q. What was a favorite, and at the same time, a profitable pursuit of the Puritans ?

A. Priest-hunting; they even imported blood hounds from America, and trained them to track to the mountain-caverns that sacred prey; this is the reason, that at the very recital of it, the heart of the Irish peasant, yet, thrills with horror.

Q. What does Mr. Prendergast write ?

A. Such orders as the following (writes Mr. Prendergast) are abundant:—10th of August, 1657, five pounds on the certificate of Major Thomas Stanley, to Thomas Gregson and Samuel Alley, for the arrest of Donogh Hagerty, a Popish priest. On 13th April, 1657, to Sergeant Gibbs and Corporal Thomas Hill, ten pounds for apprehending two Popish

priests, viz: Maurice Prendergast and Edmund Fahey.

Q. What was instituted at this period?

A. A new tribunal was instituted, called a high court of justice.

Q. What was the object of Cromwell's government in instituting this court?

A. That the persecution might be carried on with some semblance of justice.

Q. What is said of the English courts of justice in Ireland at this period?

A. In them, all forms of law and justice were set aside; and so iniquitous and bloody were the sentences pronounced in these courts, that they were commonly called, "Cromwell's slaughter-houses."

Q. What does De Burgo write?

A. "The Israelites in Egypt," writes De Burgo, "could cry to Pharoah from their oppression, yet this was not granted to the Irish."

Q. How does the same author continue?

A. "If the Israelites," he continues, "were oppressed, they had however, the flesh-pots and abundance of food; but, the Irish, whilst enduring a worse than Egyptian slavery, are exterminated by famine and the sword."

Q. In what year did Cromwell die?

A. In 1695.

CHAPTER XXXV

Charles II restored to his throne.

Q. In what year was Charles II, restored to his throne ?

A. In 1660.

Q. Did he favor the Cromwellian party, who had fought against his father and himself in Ireland ?

A. Yes ; he confirmed them in the possession of the estates, which they had taken from his loyal suffering Irish Catholic subjects.

Q. How did he favor two of the chief Cromwellian leaders, Lord Broughill and Sir Charles Coote ?

A. By creating the former Earl of Orrery, and the latter Earl of Montrath.

Q. When did the new Irish parliament meet ?

A. In 1661.

Q. Of what materials was the House of Commons composed ?

A. Chiefly of the adventurers who had acquired estates under Cromwell.

Q. What was their character ?

A. They were upstarts from the very lowest classes ; they were extremely ignorant ; inflated with spiritual pride, and bigots of the darkest hue.

Q. What were the the subjects that engaged the attention of this parliament ?

A. The restoration of the Episcopal Protestant Church, and the settlement of the confiscated es-

tates in the possession of the Cromwellian proprietors.

Q. Were there any Catholic members in that parliament ?

A. Yes, a few ; there were one or two Catholic members for boroughs, and a small number of Catholic representatives of counties.

Q. How did the Puritan majority treat these ?

A. They first, tried to get rid of them by imposing an oath of qualification, which no Catholic could take.

Q. Did that scheme succeed ?

A. No ; for the bill they prepared for imposing the oath was rejected by the English privy council.

Q. What did they next try ?

A. They tried to expel the Catholic members by a vote of the House.

Q. Did they succeed ?

A. No ; for the Lords Justices condemned that project, as being an infraction on the Royal prerogative.

Q. How were the Puritan members of this parliament induced to vote, for the restoration of the Episcopal Church ?

A. They were induced by the dexterous management of Ormond.

Q. How did Ormond manage ?

A. He postponed the question of settling the estates, until after the question of the church should have been disposed of.



Q. What did the Puritan members see that would be to their interest ?

A. They saw it would be their interest to conciliate Ormond, by voting for the establishment of the Episcopal Church.

Q. Did the old proprietors make a struggle for their estates ?

A. Yes; their claims were brought before the English privy council.

Q. On what did they base their claims ?

A. They based their claims on right and justice.

Q. On what did they partly rely ?

A. On the merits of their own loyalty to Charles and his father, when contrasted with the rebellious conduct of the Cromwellian party, who had caused the late king's murder.

Q. Had these claims and merits any weight with Charles ?

A. None, whatever; he looked upon the ruined Irish loyalists, who had lost their all in his service, as being too weak to give him any annoyance, in return for his desertion of their interests.

Q. On the other side, how did he look upon the Cromwellian party ?

A. He saw they were strong enough to render it worth his while to conciliate them.

Q. Was Charles actuated by any other selfish motives ?

A. Yes; he wanted to preserve what was called "the English interest in Ireland."

Q. What did he conceive in his bigoted and ungrateful heart ?

A. He conceived that the new Cromwellian proprietors, from their bitter hatred of the Irish people, were the fittest tools to effectuate that object; he readily gave them the assistance of his influence.

Q. How did Ormond act ?

A. He at first affected a desire to serve the Irish claimants ; but, as the Cromwellian parliament had bribed him with a grant of £30,000, the Catholics suspected his sincerity, and refused his aid.

Q. What was the final result ?

A. The confirmation of the Cromwellian soldiers and adventurers in the forfeited estates, and the exclusion of the Irish claimants from any redress whatsoever.

Q. Had Ormond profited by his share in the public events since the year 1641 ?

A. Yes ; his estates, prior to that period had been worth about £7,000 a year ; but after the Act of Settlement, his property amounted to the annual value of £80,000.

Q. What act affecting Ireland was next passed by the English parliament ?

A. An act to prevent the importation of Irish cattle into England.

Q. Was this act observed ?

A. Yes ; until the great fire of London, when the Irish having nothing else to send the sufferers, sent them a present of cattle for their relief.

Q. How did the English acknowledge this gift ?

A. With the greatest ingratitude.

Q. How so ?

A. After eating the Irish beef, they represented the charitable act as an attempt to evade the cattle act.

Q. Did Ormond try to serve any Irish interests ?

A. Yes ; he promoted the linen and woollen manufactures, and invited over the ablest foreign artizans to instruct the natives.

Q. Meanwhile, how were the hot Protestant party in England occupied ?

A. In devising and circulating rumors of popish plots, conspiracies, and intended massacres.

Q. What measures did they recommend Ormond to take ?

A. They advised him to expel the Catholic inhabitants from every walled town in Ireland, and to arrest every peer and gentleman of Irish lineage.

Q. What was their object in giving this advice ?

A. To goad the Irish into a rebellion, in order to afford an opportunity for fresh confiscations.

Q. Did Ormond act on their advice ?

A. He did not ; and thus Ireland was preserved in quiet, and the hopes of those persons who desired new forfeitures were disappointed.

Q. In 1679, what illustrious man was brought to the Scaffold ?

A. Oliver Plunket, a scion of the noble family of Fingal, and Archbishop of Armagh.

Q. What were his political opinions ?

A. He had ever been loyal to the Stuart dynasty.

Q. Of what was he accused by the Protestant fanatics ?

A. He was charged with holding treasonable correspondence with France, and the Irish on the continent.

Q. What followed ?

A. He was arrested and placed in the Castle of Dublin.

Q. How long was he confined in the Castle ?

A. Ten months.

Q. What did the English zealots next do ?

A. They caused him to be removed from Dublin to London, contrary to the laws and customs of both kingdoms.

Q. Why did they bring him to London ?

A. Because they were afraid to try him in his own country, as they knew they could not condemn him.

Q. Where was he arraigned for trial ?

A. In London, on the 8th of June, 1681.

Q. What did he offer to do ?

A. He offered to bring witnesses from Ireland to establish his innocence, but was refused the time necessary for that purpose.

Q. By whom was the prosecution conducted ?

A. By Maynard and Jeffries, in violation of every form of law, and every consideration of justice.

Q. What did the Earl of Essex do ?

A. He interceded with the king in his behalf.

Q. What did Charles answer ?

A. He answered, almost in the words of Pilate—  
 “ I cannot pardon him, because I dare not. His blood be upon your conscience ; you could have saved him if you pleased. ”

Q. What was the verdict ?

A. The jury after a quarter of an hour's deliberation, brought in the verdict of guilty, although not a tittle of credible evidence was produced against him.

Q. What was the sentence pronounced by the brutal chief justice ?

A. To be hung, emboweled, and quartered, on the 1st day of July, 1681.

Q. What did the venerable martyr do ?

A. He bowed his head to the bench, and exclaimed : *Deo Gratias !*

Q. In what year did Charles II. die ?

A. In 1684 ; not without the suspicion of being poisoned.

---

## CHAPTER XXXVI.

### The Reign of James the Second.

Q. who succeeded Charles on the throne ?

A. His brother, James the Second.

Q. Did James remove Ormond from the government of Ireland ?

A. Yes ; and replaced him by his kinsman the Earl of Clarendon.

Q. What was Clarendon's policy with regard to the Catholics ?

A. He admitted them into the privy council, and advanced them to the bench.

Q. What was James's policy with reference to the religious differences of his subjects ?

A. He published a proclamation granting full liberty of conscience to all.

Q. What was the great principle of the English revolution of 1688 ?

A. Representative government, as opposed to the arbitrary power of despotic monarchy.

Q. What steps did James take, when he heard that William of Orange had landed in England to contest the throne with him ?

A. He fled to France.

Q. Who was at that time Lord-Lieutenant of Ireland ?

A. The Earl of Tyrconnell.

Q. What did Tyrconnell do ?

A. He augmented and strengthened by all the means in his power the Catholic army.

Q. How did the enemies of the Irish Catholics act at this juncture ?

A. They repeated the old trick, so frequently

used, of accusing the Catholics of a purpose to massacre the Protestants.

Q. What were extensively circulated among the Protestant party by designing persons ?

A. Anonymous letters, professing to give the most accurate details of the plot, were extensively circulated.

Q. What terms did William of Orange offer to the Irish Catholics ?

A. He offered them the possession of a third part of the churches in the kingdom ; equality of civil and religious privileges with all other religious persuasions ; and as full security of person and property as any other class of the subjects of the crown enjoyed.

Q. Did the Irish Catholics accept these offers ?

A. They did not.

Q. Why so ?

A. Because they believed themselves bound in conscience to preserve their loyalty to James, and they looked upon William as a usurper.

Q. What did King James resolve ?

A. To strike a blow for his crown in Ireland ; and accordingly sailed from France to Kinsale, where he landed on the 12th of March, 1689.

Q. What reception did he meet ?

A. A most loyal one, from the corporations, gentry and clergy ; even the Protestant clergy vied with the Catholic priesthood in their ardent professions of allegiance.

Q. When did the Irish parliament meet ?

A. In May 1689. The king opened the session.

Q. Was that parliament a fair representation of the Irish people ?

A. Yes ; it included Catholics and Protestants ; the former predominated in the House of Commons ; there were Protestant Bishops in the House of Lords, but no Catholic Prelates.

Q. What were the topics of the king's speech ?

A. His majesty denounced all violations of the rights of conscience as abhorrent to his principles.

Q. What did he promise ?

A. The security of property and the perfect equality of Protestants and Catholics.

Q. To what did he call the attention of parliament ?

A. To the trading and manufacturing interest of the nation.

Q. What did he recommend ?

A. He recommended to their care those persons, whom the Act of Settlement had unjustly deprived of their property.

Q. What act did this parliament pass ?

A. An act for the full establishment of liberty of conscience.

Q. Did the Catholic party support this act ?

A. Yes ; it received the warm assent of every Catholic member of this parliament, in which the great majority of the members were Catholics.



Q. Was it in accordance with the spirit of the Irish Catholics at large ?

A. Pre-eminently so ; neither then, nor at any other time, did the Irish Catholics desire the exclusion of any class of their countrymen from any political privilege which they themselves enjoyed.

Q. What other act was passed in this parliament ?

A. It enacted that tithes should be paid by each person to the pastor of his own communion.

Q. What bill did the two Houses pass ?

A. A bill repealing Poyning's law, and establishing the legislative and judicial independence of Ireland.

Q. What was the fate of this bill ?

A. It was vetoed by the miserable James, to whom it appeared inconsistent with his favorite notion of " an English interest " in Ireland.

Q. Was the Act of Settlement repealed this session ?

A. Yes ; and the forfeited estates which the Cromwellian adventurers had obtained, were thereby restored to their former owners.

Q. What grant did the Irish parliament make to James ?

A. Twenty thousand pounds per month.

Q. What financial scheme had James recourse to ?

A. He issued a proclamation doubling the value of money.

**Q.** How did the merchants and traders evade this proclamation ?

**A.** By instantly doubling the prices of their goods.

**Q.** Did James besiege the city of Derry ?

**A.** Yes ; the assault was commanded by General Hamilton ; the defence was conducted by a dissenting clergyman, named Walker.

**Q.** What was the issue of the conflict ?

**A.** The Derrymen defended themselves with great valor, and on the arrival of vessels in the harbor bearing provisions for the gallant inhabitants, Hamilton raised the siege and withdrew.

---

## CHAPTER XXXVII.

### Struggle between James and William.

**Q.** What measures did William of Orange take against James in Ireland ?

**A.** He sent his Dutch general, Count Schomberg, with an army of 10,000 men, into that country.

**Q.** When and where did they land ?

**A.** They landed on the 13th of August, 1689, at Bangor Bay, near Carrickfergus.

**Q.** How does Rev. Dr. Gorge, who was chaplain to Schomberg, describe the Williamite army ?

**A.** He describes them as wallowing in profligacy

too odious and loathsome for description. They were, however, brave and well-trained soldiers.

Q. What was Schomberg's first attempt ?

A. The siege of Carrickfergus.

Q. Who was the governor of that town ?

A. McCarthy More.

Q. Did he make a gallant defence ?

A. Yes ; he did not surrender until all his powder was exhausted, and then he obtained honorable terms from Schomberg.

Q. Did Schomberg's army observe the terms of capitulation ?

A. No ; they scandalously violated their engagements, and rioted in every excess of flagitious license. Female virtue was outraged, and private property was plundered and devastated.

Q. Did the native Irish, in the various civil wars of the kingdom, ever offer insult or injury to the females of the opposite party ?

A. Never ; and this fact is a proud and honorable boast for our nation, especially when contrasted with the beastly licentiousness, that marked the conduct of the English soldiery in Ireland in every civil strife.

Q. Did Schomberg countenance the ruffianism of his men at Carrickfergus ?

A. No ; he endeavored to check them ? and thereby obtained their hatred.

Q. Did James's army engage that of Schomberg ?

A. No ; the timid and vacillating spirit of the king appears to have influenced his generals. The men were dissatisfied at not being led against the enemy.

Q. What were Marshal Rosen's words to James ?

A. " Sire, " said he, " if your majesty had ten kingdoms, you would lose them. "

Q. Why did not Schomberg engage James's army ?

A. Because his men were exhausted by disease and hunger, and must have inevitably been defeated if they quitted their position.

Q. What losses did the Williamites sustain just then ?

A. They lost Sligo and Jamestown, which were stormed and taken by the gallant Sarsfield, Earl of Lucan.

Q. How did Schomberg's campaign terminate ?

A. In the destruction, by disease and famine, of the greater portion of his army ; while no advantage had been gained by his efforts against James.

Q. On what course did William then resolve ?

A. On proceeding to Ireland and conducting the campaign himself.

Q. Where and when did he land in Ireland ?

A. At Carrickfergus, on the 14th of June, 1690.

Q. By whom was he attended ?

A. By Prince George of Denmark, the Duke of Ormond, and a large train of royal followers.

Q. What was the number of William's army ?

A. Thirty-six thousand picked men.

Q. On the part of William, what is said ?

A. That he was anxious to bring his rival to an engagement.

Q. Where did James take up his position ?

A. On the southern bank of the River Boyne.

Q. What did the French officers of his army try ?

A. They tried to dissuade him from coming to an engagement on that occasion.

Q. What did they represent to him ?

A. That they were inferior in numbers to those of the enemy ; and moreover, that the greater part of his forces were new recruits.

Q. What did they show him ?

A. They showed him how easily he could maintain a defensive warfare beyond the Shannon, until he would receive reinforcements from France.

Q. What did they tell him ?

A. They told him that delay would weaken his rival.

Q. What is said of the courage of James ?

A. That it never had formed any very striking feature in his character.

Q. On what did he insist on this occasion ?

A. On fighting with great animation.

Q. What were his officers and soldiers persuaded ?

A. That he intended to take a desperate part in the engagement.

Q. What precaution did he take at the same time ?

A. He despatched Sir Patrick Trant to Waterford, to secure a vessel for his escape in case of defeat.

Q. What have you to observe with regard to the armies, now destined to combat, for two kings on Irish soil ?

A. They were strongly marked by those distinctions of race and religion, which add bitterness to struggles for power, while they present striking contrasts to the eye of the painter of military life and manners.

Q. Of what element was James's army composed ?

A. Chiefly of Celtic and Catholic.

Q. Hence, what do we find ?

A. We find four regiments commanded by O'Neills, two by O'Briens, two by O'Kellys, one each by McCarthy More, Maguire, O'More, O'Donnell, McMahan and Magennis, principally recruited among their own clansmen.

Q. What other Celtic regiments were there ?

A. The regiments of Sarsfield, Nugent, De Courcy, Fitzgerald, Grace and Burke, were chiefly Celts, in rank and file.

Q. Of what was William's army composed ?

A. It was composed of "a strange medley of many nations"—Scandinavians, Swiss, Dutch, Prussians, Huguenot-French, English, Scotch, "Scotch-Irish," and Anglo-Irish. Perhaps the most extraordinary

element in that strange medley was the Danish contingent of horse and foot.

Q. Where did William take up his first headquarters?

A. At Belfast, where he ascertained the forces at his disposal to be upwards of 40,000 men.

Q. What enabled the Williamite army to take the initiative, in the campaign of 1690?

A. Their abundant supplies of military stores from England, which wafted from every port upon the channel, whilst James had not a keel afloat.

Q. On the memorable morning of the 30th of June 1690, what was seen?

A. William's army advancing in three columns to the banks of the Boyne.

Q. What did William undertake?

A. To survey the enemy's lines from a hill which commanded an extensive prospect.

Q. Anxious, however, to gain a nearer view, what did the king do?

A. He proceeded with some of his officers to the bank of the river, and having spent some time in reconnoitring the enemy's position, sat down to refresh himself on some rising ground.

Q. While in this position what took place?

A. A ball from the Irish lines grazed his right shoulder, tearing the coat and inflicting a slight wound, while a second shot killed one of his attendants and two horses.

Q. What did William immediately do?

A. He rode through his army to counteract the dispiriting effects of a report of his death that had been spread.

---

### CHAPTER XXXVIII.

#### The Battle of the Boyne—The Sieges of Athlone and Limerick.

Q. On what day was the battle of the Boyne fought ?

A. On the 1st of July, 1690.

Q. Where did the battle commence ?

A. At the ford of Oldbridge, between Sir Neale O'Neill, and the younger Schomberg.

Q. What befell O'Neill ?

A. O'Neill fell mortally wounded, and the ford was forced.

Q. To what was the battle now transferred ?

A. It was transferred from the gunners to the swordsmen and pikemen—from the banks to the fords and borders of the river.

Q. What did William do at this juncture ?

A. He swam his horse across in imminent danger.

Q. What is said of William ?

A. That he animated his men by his presence, and frequently mingled in the thickest of the contest.

Q. What is said of the Irish troops ?

A. " With admirable courage and gallantry, "



says the Duke of Berwick, "the Irish troops charged the English *ten times* after they had crossed the river."

Q. Did James take an active part in the battle ?

A. No ; he looked on at the contest from the Hill of Donore, two miles away.

Q. What did he exclaim when a portion of William's army gave way, before the charge of the Irish dragoons ?

A. He exclaimed, " Spare, O spare my English subjects ! "

Q. How long did the battle last ?

A. It lasted during seven hours, after which the Irish fell back on Duleek in good order.

Q. How was the conflict sustained ?

A. Great valor was displayed on both sides ; but the great superiority, in point of numbers and equipments on the part of William's army, decided the victory in their favor.

Q. Before the battle was decided what did James do ?

A. He deserted his brave and faithful soldiers, and with precipitation fled to Dublin.

Q. To what was the ill success of the day justly ascribed ?

A. To the cowardice of King James.

Q. What did the Irish soldiers say when James fled to Dublin ?

A. Their cry was, " Change kings, and we'll fight the battle over again. "

Q. Exclusively of the numerical advantage, by what were the Williamites encouraged?

A. By the presence of a monarch who led them with bravery and skill ; whilst the Jacobites were dispirited by the cowardice and incapacity of James.

Q. What was the conduct of William's soldiers after the battle ?

A. The Enniskilleners and some other desperadoes, murdered in cold blood many of the peasantry, whom curiosity had drawn to the spot.

Q. Who received James at Dublin Castle ?

A. Lady Tyrconnell received him on the staircase ; and when his majesty with base ingratitude and falsehood, ascribed the event of the battle to the cowardice of the Irish, " who " he said, " had run away, " Lady Tyrconnell replied with spirit : " Your majesty, I see, has won the race. " In truth, James had not waited for the end of the engagement.

Q. To where did James proceed ?

A. After a short stay at Dublin, he continued his flight to Waterford and sailed for France.

Q. Whom did the Irish lose in this battle ?

A. The Irish lost no person of distinction except the brave Hamilton.

Q. What did he reply when asked if the Irish would fight again ?

A. The intrepid general replied ; " Upon my honor, I believe they will. "

Q. By whom was the Irish army chiefly directed ?

A. By the brave and patriotic Sarsfield.

Q. Did William lose many of his officers in this battle ?

A. It is said that William lost several of his most distinguished officers.

Q. What commission did William issue ?

A. A commission to confiscate the estates of all the Jacobite leaders who had taken up arms.

Q. What did King James the next year, 1691 ?

A. He obtained some forces and stores from Louis of France.

Q. On whom was the chief command conferred ?

A. On St. Ruth a French general of some reputation.

Q. What was the conduct of James towards the Irish ?

A. He was continually insulting them.

Q. How did he act towards the brave Sarsfield ?

A. Sarsfield was the favorite of the Irish army, yet, he would not give him the command, though under a thousand obligations to that gallant general.

Q. What was William's next military enterprise ?

A. The siege of Athlone.

Q. Who was appointed for this mission ?

A. General Douglas, at the head of ten regiments of foot and five of horse.

Q. Who was the governor of Athlone ?

A. Colonel Grace.

Q. When summoned by Douglas to surrender, what was Grace's reply ?

A. He fired a pistol shot over the head of the messenger, desiring him to take that as his reply.

Q. How did Douglas proceed ?

A. He constructed a battery in front of the town, and opened a fire on the castle.

Q. How did the garrison meet the attack ?

A. By returning Douglas's fire from the castle with tremendous effect.

Q. What was he obliged to do ?

A. He was obliged to raise the siege.

Q. When did William besiege Limerick ?

A. On the 9th of August, 1690.

Q. What was the conduct of his soldiers prior to the siege ?

A. They renewed the brutalities they had practiced at Athlone. They plundered and burned the country, and committed acts of the grossest licentiousness.

Q. Of what was William confident ?

A. William, confident of an easy victory, appeared before the town, but more than twelve months were to elapse before all his power could reduce those mouldering walls, which the fugitive French ambassador had declared " might be taken with roasted apples. "

Q. What feat was executed by Sarsfield at this time ?

A. An exploit planned and executed by that brave officer, the day succeeding William's arrival, saved the city another year and raised him to the highest pitch of popularity.

Q. Relate the particulars of this daring exploit ?

A. Along the Clare side of the Shannon, under cover of the night, Sarsfield galloped as fast as horse could carry him, at the head of his dragoons, and crossed the river at Killaloe.

Q. Whom did they encounter on the way ?

A. One Manus Bryan, a Protestant of Clare, who suspecting the design of the flying horsemen, hastened to William's camp with the news, but he was only laughed at for his pains.

Q. How did William act ?

A. William, however, never despising any precaution in war, despatched Sir John Lanier with 500 horse to protect his siege-train, then seven miles in the rear, on the road between Limerick and Cashel. Sarsfield, however, was too quick for Sir John.

Q. What did Sarsfield do the day after crossing at Killaloe ?

A. He kept his men concealed in the hilly country, and the next night swooped down upon the convoy in charge of the siege-train, who were quietly sleeping round the ruined church of Ballanedy.

Q. What was the result ?

A. The sentinels were sabred at their posts, the guards, half-dressed, fled in terror or were speedily cut down. The gun-carriages were quickly yoked, and drawn together to a convenient place where, planted in pits with ammunition, they were blown to atoms.

Q. Where was Lanier at this time ?

A. Lanier arrived within view of the terrific scene in time to feel its stunning effects.

Q. What was the effect of this shock ?

A. The ground for miles round shook as from an earthquake ; the glare and roar of the explosion were felt in William's camp, and through the beleaguered city.

Q. What became of Sarsfield ?

A. Sarsfield, on the morrow, was safely back in his old encampment, without the loss of a single man ; Limerick was in an uproar of delight, while William's army, to the lowest rank, felt the depression of so unexpected a blow.

Q. How did William remedy the evil ?

A. He procured a new siege-train of thirty-six guns and four mortars from Waterford, and commenced pouring red-hot shot and shell on the devoted city.

Q. After a week's bombardment what was made ?

A. A gap was made in the walls near St. John's gate, and a storming party of the English guards, the Anglo-Irish, Prussians, and Danes, was launched into the breach.

Q. What defence did the Irish garrison of Limerick make ?

A. A most gallant one ; even the women mingled among the soldiers, and fought as valiantly as the men. They declared that they would rather be torn in pieces, than submit to the power of wretches, who were guilty of such foul abominations, as the Williamite army had committed.

Q. How long did the conflict last ?

A. Three hours.

Q. What was the result ?

A. After an action of uncommon fierceness and determination on both sides, the Williamites retired with the loss of 30 officers, 800 men killed, and 1,200 wounded.

Q. What was the number killed on the Irish side ?

A. Four hundred killed—their wounded were not counted.

Q. What did William next do ?

A. Four days later William abandoned the siege, retreated to Waterford, and embarked for England with some of his principal officers, where his presence was imperatively demanded.

Q. Whom did he appoint to command his army in Ireland ?

A. Count De Solmes, who was afterwards succeeded by General Ginckle.

Q. What walled city was next attacked ?

A. Cork ; which was taken after a brave defence ;

the inhabitants having stipulated for protection for their persons and property.

Q. Were these terms observed ?

A. No ; a Williamite mob abused the people, and plundered the property of the Catholic and Jacobite inhabitants ; in which acts of licence they were joined by the triumphant soldiery.

Q. What was the amount of the confiscations under William ?

A. One million and sixty thousand acres.

Q. What town of importance did William besiege in the ensuing year ?

A. Athlone.

Q. Who conducted this second siege of Athlone ?

A. General Ginckle.

Q. When did he appear before the town ?

A. On the 18th of June, 1691.

Q. What resistance did the garrison make ?

A. A most valiant one. The assailing force was now far superior to that which General Douglas had brought against the town, on the occasion of the previous siege,

Q. How many cannon did Ginckle mount on his battery ?

A. Ten ; with which he opened a tremendous fire on the town and castle.

Q. What did the English now repair ?

A. The bridge across the river which had been destroyed by Colonel Grace in the former siege.

Q. How did the Irish meet this attempt ?



A. A sergeant and ten men, cased in armor, rushed forth from the town to destroy the wooden passage the English had made.

Q. What was the fate of this brave little party ?

A. They were destroyed by a shot from the English battery.

Q. Was their attempt renewed by others ?

A. Yes ; a second party filled their places.

Q. Did they succeed ?

A. Yes ; they destroyed the bridge. Only two of this party survived their desperate exploit.

Q. What was the result on the invading force ?

A. Ginckle was unable for nine days to repeat his assault.

Q. How did the Irish act, when he renewed the attack ?

A. They threw grenades into all the wooden works on which he had been occupied during the interval ; and all his pontoons, galleries, and breastworks were consumed to ashes,

Q. What was the conduct of King James's general, St. Ruth ?

A. He absurdly removed the brave men who so ably garrisoned Athlone, and supplied their places with inferior regiments.

Q. Meanwhile, how was Ginckle occupied ?

A. He seriously debated with his officers whether he should abandon the siege or renew the assault. His own opinion was in favor of retreating ; his

officers, however, prevailed on him to renew his attempt by fording the river next morning.

Q. How did Ginckle try to throw the garrison off their guard ?

A. He began to remove his guns from the batteries, as if he were preparing to retreat.

Q. Did this trick deceive the Irish officers ?

A. No ; and they implored St. Ruth to prepare for another assault on the town.

Q. What was St. Ruth's reply ?

A. " The English " said he, " will not dare to try it. "

Q. What did General Sarsfield, answer ?

A. " No enterprise, " said Sarsfield, " is too great for English valor. "

Q. Did St. Ruth comply with the advice of his Irish officers ?

A. No ; he was obstinate and self-sufficient, and refused to believe that Ginckle would really hazard another attack. He accordingly neglected to make any preparations of defence.

Q. What was the consequence ?

A. On the next morning the English had forded the river and entered the town, ere St. Ruth had awakened from his slumbers.

Q. Whither did St. Ruth with his army retreat, after he had lost Athlone ?

A. To the hill of Kilcommodon, near the Castle of Aughrim in the County Galway, where he prepar-

ed to risk everything on the hazard of a pitched battle.

Q. How did Ginckle proceed ?

A. He moved slowly from Athlone in pursuit of his enemy ; and on the morning of the 11th of July, found himself within range of the Irish lines.

---

## CHAPTER XXXIX.

### THE BATTLE OF AUGHHRIM.

Q. On what day was the battle of Aughrim fought ?

A. On the 12th of July, 1691.

Q. What was the number of men on each side ?

A. St. Ruth's force numbered from 15,000 to 20,000 men, with nine field-pieces ; Ginckle commanded from 25,000 to 30,000, with four batteries—two of which mounted six guns each,

Q. What have you to observe of Ginckle's command ?

A. It was really a formidable army, and wholly composed of veterans, both officers and men, who had seen service on many a continental battle-field.

Q. What was Ginckle's next move ?

A. He approached that field whereon was to be decided the destiny of three kingdoms, the fate of one of the oldest dynasties of Europe, and the liberty or thralldom of a race coeval with European history.

**Q.** What was passing in the Irish camp ?

**A.** The scene passing in the Irish camp was highly characteristic of the people, and the cause they advocated. It was the dawn of the Sabbath morning, and its advent was solemnized by religious observance.

**Q.** The ceremonies being ended, what took place ?

**A.** The troops were drawn out in the same order of battle, in which they had been for the last two days, awaiting the arrival of the enemy.

**Q.** What was their appearance, drawn up in battle array ?

**A.** It was most gallant and imposing ; which the import of the hour and the associations of the day and place, rendered deeply solemn and impressive.

**Q.** How long did they remain in this order of battle ?

**A.** During the early hours, the deep calm of determination settled over all ; but as the morning advanced the silence was at length disturbed, by the stirring notes of preparation.

**Q.** What was now heard from one end of the line to the other ?

**A.** The shrill tones of the trumpet, followed by a long roll of drums, re-echoed along the hill.

**Q.** What distinguished officer, then, rode to the front ?

**A.** St. Ruth, equipped in a splendid uniform, and bearing " a snow-white plume in his hat, " rode along the lines, and harangued his men in a few

impassioned words, that touched the springs of many a harrowing and hallowed memory.

Q. What was the effect ?

A. The fire of heroism was kindled in every breast ; acclamations loud and prolonged rent the air, amid which. St. Ruth retired.

Q. Where did he take up his position ?

A. On the crest of the hill, and, surrounded by his staff, looked eagerly for the enemy through the passing clouds that, still intercepted the two armies.

Q. What were the approaching signs ?

A. Signs of approaching conflict now multiplied rapidly, and aids were arriving in quick succession to announce the slow, but, steady advance of the enemy

Q. It being now ten o'clock, what was seen ?

A. The Irish pickets descending into the adjacent valley, and falling back on their support at Urrachree and Anghrim.

Q. At eleven, what was rolling away ?

A. At eleven the clouds were rolling away, the mid-day sun presented the two armies to each other, in the stern magnificence of war !

Q. What was now given ?

A. The word of command passed along the line, and all were at once in motion.

Q. What succeeded ?

A. Then succeeded the rolling tramp of squadron after squadron of cavalry, hastening to their

allotted stations, the artillery-men wheeling their guns into position, and the leaden step of the infantry, moving down the hill and forming in their advanced trenches along its base.

Q. What did the English army continue to do ?

A. The English army continued to move on until within a quarter of a mile of the morass, where it halted.

Q. What did Ginckle then do ?

A. He ascended a steep hill which enabled him to take a full view of the Irish lines.

Q. Where was St. Ruth at the same time ?

A. On the ridge of Kilcommodon, whence he had a complete view of the entire English army ; and thus, for some time, each general stood scrutinizing the ranks and disposition of the other.

Q. What did St. Ruth see ?

A. He saw that the strength of Ginckle's army lay towards Urrachree, and he expressed much satisfaction that he had anticipated this movement, and had made a corresponding disposition to meet it.

Q. What was Ginckle's plan ?

A. To get possession of the Pass of Urrachree ; he accordingly directed his first movement in that quarter.

Q. What natural obstructions rendered the pass at this point difficult ?

A. The pass was rendered difficult, owing to two rivulets, which crossed in different directions, the road in front of Urrachree Castle.

Q. Between these two streams what had St. Ruth placed ?

A. He stationed a small cavalry outpost, rather with a view to invite, than repel the enemy.

Q. Against this point what did Gineckle direct ?

A. A company of Danish dragoons, with orders to gain the pass and hold it, until reinforced by the infantry advancing from the main line for that purpose.

Q. Describe the charge ?

A. Apprehending no resistance from the few troops stationed there, the Danish horse soon cleared the distance between them, and quickening their pace to a gallop, advanced to the charge until within a few rods, when, seeing the Irish still maintain their position, they suddenly halted.

Q. At that instant what did the Irish do ?

A. Taking advantage of their indecision, they sounded the charge and advanced on them at full gallop.

Q. What was the effect ?

A. The Danes did not await the shock, but, breaking in disorder, retreated off the field and returned to the rear of their infantry.

Q. What does Story, William's chaplain, say about the Danish troops on this occasion ?

A. "These men," says Story, "ran away from a less number than themselves, though the officer behaved himself very well."—He might have said,

less than half their number. The Irish were but seven men ; there were sixteen of the Danes.

Q. What effect had this cowardly act on Ginckle ?

A. He was deeply mortified at the unsoldierlike conduct of his Danish cavalry.

Q. What did he do to remedy the evil ?

A. He ordered 200 of Cunningham's dragoons to advance beyond the stream.

Q. What is said of these troops ?

A. They were reckoned the best dragoons in the British service, and as they rode across the intervening slope, with swords drawn, and their steel caps and cuirasses glancing through the clouds of dust, struck from the parched soil over which they passed, the Irish felt that the battle was about to open in reality, and caught its inspirations.

Q. Did the English dragoons cross the stream ?

A. No ; as they neared the pass where the little outpost stood to receive them, they halted suddenly, wheeled to the left, and took post behind a line of hedges, until the infantry came to their support.

Q. The infantry having arrived, what took place ?

A. The cavalry were again put in motion towards the pass.

Q. What did the Irish in the meantime ?

A. They retired to a hill in their rear, where, being reinforced by a company of Lord Galway's



horse, they wheeled to the front and stood to invite the charge of the enemy.

Q. What was the next move of the Irish cavalry ?

A. As the British dragoons advanced across the stream, the Irish again wheeled round and retired, with the intention of drawing them farther from their supports.

Q. Did this stratagem produce the desired effect ?

A. Yes ; the English dragoons being encouraged by this indecisive conduct, charged on the Irish with great impetuosity.

Q. What was the result ?

A. Passing the hill, they were saluted by a well-directed musketry fire, under which they wavered, and, at the same moment, the Irish battery on the right opened on the advancing files of the English infantry.

Q. Did the English batteries respond ?

A. Yes ; the fire was instantly answered by the opposing batteries, which had now been brought into position along the whole line, and to the stirring responses of their artillery, the cavalry on both sides rushed to the encounter.

Q. Describe the battle ?

A. It was deadly and intense. Along the broad plateau in front of Urrachree, hidden by the enveloping clouds of dust and smoke, excepting at intervals that rendered the flashing of their arms perceptible, this tumultuous mass of men and horses rocked and swayed in all the dread clangor of small-

arms and cannon, mingled with the fierce neigh of the war-steeds driven headlong to the charge.

Q. What is said of the English cavalry ?

A. They bore themselves gallantly, but here, as at the Boyne, they were no match for the Irish horse, and despite the advantage of numbers, they were broken after a brief but deadly struggle, and borne back with great loss over the stream.

Q. The smoke and dust of battle being cleared away, what was seen ?

A. It was seen that the English cavalry had relinquished the fight, and retired as the Danish horse had done, while the Irish cavalry stood leisurely behind the stream to invite another onset.

Q. What effect had this on the English commander ?

A. The defeat of his favorite cavalry, by less than half their number, filled Ginckle with deep concern, and had not a less dispiriting effect on the troops that witnessed it.

Q. On what was Ginckle determined ?

A. He was determined to take the pass, the possession of this point, according to the plan adapted, was of imperative necessity.

Q. To effect his plan, on what did he resolve ?

A. He resolved to throw forward an overwhelming force of cavalry, to clear the field up to the Irish main line, and make way for the heavy columns of infantry drawn up and ready for the action.

Q. How did he proceed ?

A. The whole of Sir Albert Cunningham's dragoons were massed into charging column, and, led by himself in person, were to be hurled against the Irish squadron at the pass.

Q. What was General Eppinger ordered to do ?

A. He was ordered, with his regiment of Royal Holland dragoons—920 strong, to make a flank movement, more to the right, and, by sweeping round the hill, take the Irish in the rear, and cut them off from their supports.

Q. What did St. Ruth see from his position ?

A. He saw with exultation the gallant conduct of his cavalry, and, anticipating the next movement of Ginckle, now moved down to his right to counteract it.

Q. What was his next step ?

A. He caused the advanced troops to fall farther back, and ordered another squadron to their support.

---

## CHAPTER XL.

### Battle of Aughrim (continued).

Q. What directions did St. Ruth give ?

A. He gave them directions to continue a retiring movement until they should receive the order to charge.

Q. What did he order ?

A. He ordered Lord Galway to hold his cavalry, stationed behind the house of Urrachree, until the enemy, in passing, should receive a volley from the musketeers within it, which was to be the signal for a simultaneous charge on both divisions of the assailants.

Q. What was now the aspect of the British camp ?

A. It was all movement and activity along the whole line, Two English regiments moved briskly across the field that led down to the stream and crossed it, without any opposition.

Q. After crossing the stream, what course did they pursue ?

A. Cunningham made directly for the opposing cavalry, whilst Eppinger directed his course to the Castle of Urrachree, where he wheeled to the left to flank the Irish cavalry as directed.

Q. What did he receive in passing this point ?

A. He received the fire of the Irish musketeers, which caused him considerable loss, and the smoke from which had scarcely cleared away, when he received the shock of Galway's cavalry on his right flank, which caused him to recoil in confusion.

Q. How did the other Irish detachment act at this juncture ?

A. It closed with Cunningham's dragoons, and the entire forces on both sides were soon mingled in deadly conflict.

Q. What now animated both armies ?

A. The English were burning to wipe out the

disgrace of the previous encounter, and the Irish to maintain the prestige of a name borne unsullied, through all the changes of this wasting war.

Q. What did Ginckle now behold ?

A. He beheld with amazement his troops giving way, and immediately advanced the Portland cavalry—480 men—under the command of General Holstaple, to succor them.

Q. What did St. Ruth on his side ?

A. He threw in the Tyrconnell Guards, under General Talbot, to sustain his cavalry.

Q. How was the conflict continued ?

A. With unabated fury on both sides.

Q. What was the result ?

A. After two hours of deadly struggle, the English cavalry broke and fled in disorder, pursued by the Irish.

Q. Which were recalled ?

A. The Irish cavalry were recalled from the pursuit, and the same little band that had invited those successive assaults, reined up behind the stream, as fresh and defiant as ever.

Q. What was the loss on Ginckle's side ?

A. He lost heavily. The dragoons of Eppinger and Cunningham were decimated ; the Portland Guards suffered severely in men and horses, and their leader, General Holstaple, with many of his officers, was slain.

Q. Was the loss on the Irish side great ?

A. The loss of the Irish though beset by twice their number, was insignificant.

Q. What noted Irish General fell during the engagement ?

A. General Talbot , one of the heroes of Limerick, in an encounter with the Portland cavalry, fell, covered with many wounds.

Q. It was now past two o'clock, and how did the battle stand ?

A. The battle stood as it had begun, but the prestige of success, and the spirit it infused, remained with the Irish army.

Q. Ginckle's fortitude being shaken, and despairing of success from a further persistence in his present plan of attack, what did he do ?

A. He drew in his troops, ordered a suspension of hostilities, and called a council of his generals.

Q. What did he represent to this council ?

A. He represented according to the result of the last two hours, his fears for the final issue, should the battle be continued much longer.

Q. What did Ginckle acknowledge ?

A. He acknowledged that, notwithstanding their ardor and overwhelming odds, they had been repeatedly hurled back, with a valor and intrepidity that had damped their enthusiasm, and restored the confidence of their opponents.

Q. What precaution did he take before the council assembled ?

A. He dispatched couriers to Ballinasloe to order

up his tents, being resolved to encamp for the night, and renew the battle early on the following morning.

Q. How long did the consultation last ?

A. It lasted until four o'clock.

Q. Was the council divided ?

A. Yes ; some were in favor of the general's plan, and others for immediately renewing the battle.

Q. Which course was adapted ?

A. The latter, on the advice of Major-General Mackey. The age and experience of this o'd veteran and the simple plausibility of his arguments prevailed.

Q. What order was now countermanded ?

A. The order to bring up the tents was countermanded, and preparations were accordingly made to renew the engagement.

Q. What movement did Ginckle make, all being now ready ?

A. He moved forward his main force to the assault, across the fields of Urrachree, determined to reach the ground in front of the Irish line.

Q. How were they received by the Irish ?

A. As they approached within range they met a deadly fire, but still they pressed on with characteristic valor, delivered their fire in return and were soon at close quarters along the first line of entrenchments.

Q. What now took place ?

A. A deadly and protracted struggle now took

place, the soldiers on both sides resting their muskets on the separating hedges, and literally discharging them into each other's bosoms.

Q. What is said of the Irish troops ?

A. That they were quick, to sieze on every advantage that offered ; they would now defend one trench with the greatest obtinacy, then, would suddenly retire to another, when the enemy, thus, drawn on, would find themselves at once taken in front and flank, and borne back rapidly to the first line, where the conflict would be again renewed, and again repeated with a like result as before.

Q. How long did this desperate conflict last ?

A. It lasted for over an hour, Ginckle's last column had been pushed forward, and the result was still the same.

Q. What regiments of the enemy suffered dreadfully ?

A. The Huguenot regiments of La Mellioneire, Camdon, and Belcastle were nearly annihilated.

Q. What are the words of a Huguenot actor in the scene ?

A. " There remained" says he, "only one course to adopt—which was to perish and sell our lives dearly."

Q. What did Ginckle in this emergency ?

A. He ordered up two regiments of infantry, and the cavalry of Lanier, and Ruvigny from his right, for the final test of his experiment.

Q. What did St Ruth witness ?



A. He witnessed this intense struggle with varied emotions of hope and fear ; for, up to this hour he entertained grave doubts of the steadiness and discipline of his newly raised infantry.

Q. Were his apprehensions removed ?

A. Yes ; as he saw column after column of Ginckle's veterans hurled on them and steadily repelled, his apprehensions were removed, and he felt and expressed a full assurance of victory.

Q. What orders did General Mackey despatch to Talmash ?

A. To suspend his assault on the Pass of Aughrim, and lead back the infantry to the support of his broken division,

Q. What was now renewed ?

A. The assault was renewed all along the whole left of the Irish line, with the utmost obstinacy, assailants and assailed being so completely enveloped in dust and smoke, as to be invisible to the bystanders.

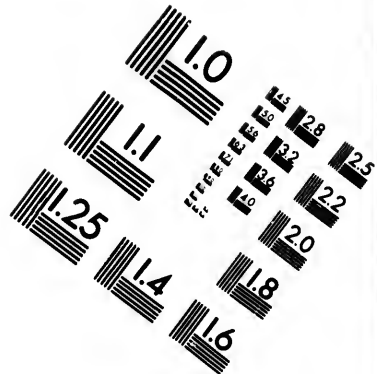
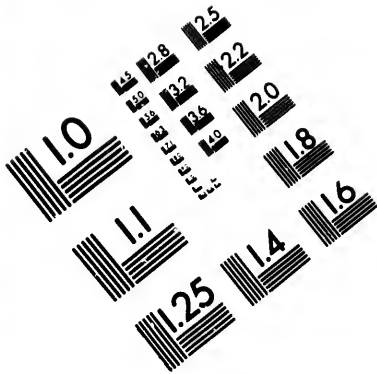
Q. What was the result after an hour of the most intense excitement and deadly conflict ?

A. The English broke and fled across the marsh to the protection of their guns, leaving their way strewn with their killed and wounded.

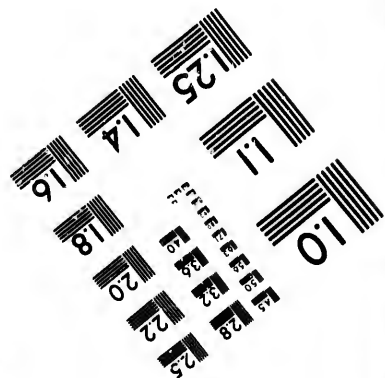
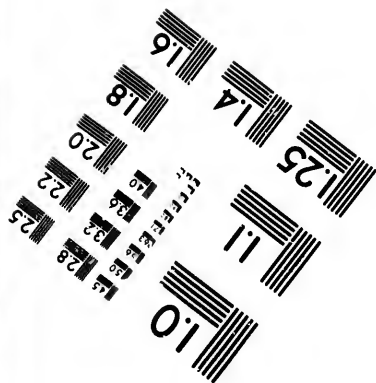
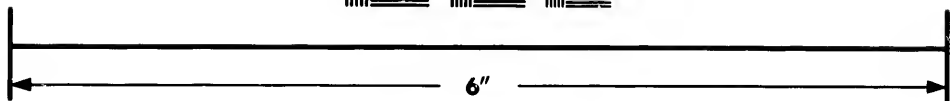
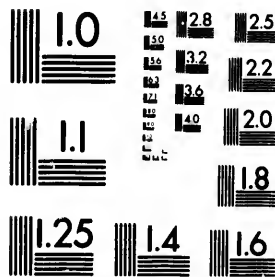
Q. With what were the English troops now seized ?

A. They were seized with consternation and dismay, and though reinforced, and urged forward with every threat and persuasion of command, they





**IMAGE EVALUATION  
TEST TARGET (MT-3)**



**Photographic  
Sciences  
Corporation**

23 WEST MAIN STREET  
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580  
(716) 872-4503

0  
1.8  
2.0  
2.2  
2.5  
2.8  
3.2  
3.6  
4.0

4.5  
5.0  
5.6  
6.3  
7.1  
8.0  
9.0  
10

could not be brought to attempt a second assault, but stood a discomfited and disheartened host, under the shelter of their cannon.

Q. On what did Ginckle's chance of success depend ?

A. On his ability to turn the Irish right, or to bring on a general engagement along the whole line.

Q. Did he try to effect his plan ?

A. Yes ; and to this end all the energies of his mind, and all the resources at his disposal had been constantly directed.

---

## CHAPTER XLI.

### BATTLE OF AUGHRIM (concluded.)

Q. Did Ginckle succeed in his plan ?

A. No ; up to this hour, it was now near sunset, and all his plans had signally failed.

Q. What is said of St. Ruth ?

A. Favored by the happy disposition which he had made of his ground, St. Ruth had so handled his army as to disconcert every attack, and defeat his enemy in detail.

Q. How did fortune seem to favor him at this juncture ?

A. Fortune seemed ready to crown him with all the charming wreaths of a glorious victory.

Q. How so ?

A. Because everything moved with precision; every plan answered his expectations; and now, at every point, he stood secure and successful.

Q. What had his cavalry sustained ?

A. His cavalry had sustained its wonted reputation, had borne down every opposition throughout the day, and its reserve stood fresh and eager, within immediate support of the only point undecided.

Q. What is said of his infantry ?

A. His infantry which had sustained the brunt of the battle, since its renewal after the early cavalry rencounters, now stood firm, defiant, and victorious.

Q. What was the loss of the enemy ?

A. Two thousand three hundred of the English strewed the valley, from Aughrim to Urrachree, while, up to this moment, the Irish loss was quite insignificant.

Q. What seemed to be now within the grasp, of St. Ruth ?

A. Victory seemed completely within his grasp, and as he doffed his hat to those around him, he exclaimed in the ardor of enthusiasm :—" Now, my children, we will beat them back to the gates of Dublin. " \*

---

\* " A boast, " says Taylor, " which the special interposition of Providence alone prevented him from accomplishing \*\*\* ten minutes more would have completed the destruction of the English army. "—Vol. ii., page 180.

Q. What was the activity of the opposing generals ?

A. It was incessant. Ginckle, was everywhere, aiding and animating his men, and sharing the danger and fatigue of the private soldier.

Q. On the other hand, what had St. Ruth followed ?

A. He had followed every movement of the battle, and was found at every point where aid or encouragement demanded his presence.

Q. What is related ?

A. Two horses had broken down under him during the fatigues of this eventful day ; and now mounting a third powerful charger he rode down to the left, to congratulate his infantry on their victory in that quarter.

Q. What did St. Ruth now behold ?

A. He beheld the last regiment of the enemy's infantry abandoned to their fate, afraid to attempt a retreat across the marsh, and defending their temporary lodgment with the last efforts of despair.

Q. What did he do ?

A. Dismounting from his horse, he approached the gunners, and with his own hand giving direction to one of the three guns bearing on the enemy's lines, returned to his staff, and remounted his steed.

Q. To what was his attention directed ?

A. To the movements of Talmash, who, at the

head of the English cavalry, and supported by a compact body of infantry, was approaching along the defile that opened up to the village and Castle of Aughrim.

Q. Inquiring casually what the enemy meant by moving in that direction, what was he answered ?

A. He was answered that they intended to force the pass and succor their infantry beneath him. "Then," said he, "*we have won the battle.*"

Q. What did he deem certain ?

A. Considering the difficulties to be encountered and the force stationed there, he deemed their destruction certain.

Q. What did he exclaim ?

A. With mingled feelings of admiration and pity, he exclaimed :—" *They are brave, 'tis a pity they should be exposed!*"

Q. What then did he do ?

A. Then forming his guards to charge down the hill, and despatching orders to call up his reserve of cavalry to confront the force of Talmash, he addressed his staff, now ranged around him, saying :—" *They are beaten, let us beat them to the purpose!*"

Q. Were these his last words ?

A. Yes ; for scarcely were they uttered, when his head was shattered by a cannon-ball, and he lay a corpse on the hill of Kilcommodon, while his horse ran wild and riderless across the plain !

Q. What did his attendants do ?



A. His attendants approached, threw a cloak over the body, and bore it to the rear, whither it was followed by his guards and the members of his staff.

Q. What was now suspended ?

A. The charge that was to decide the battle was suspended. The Irish infantry, unaware of the death of their general, still held their ground. The cavalry stood waiting the order to charge, and nothing was wanting to complete the victory but that expected word ; but it never came.

Q. Meanwhile, what did Talmash behold ?

A. He beheld the confusion and the hesitancy of the Irish troops on the hill, and auguring that something was going wrong there, pushed on with greater rapidity.

Q. What opened on him ?

A. The fire from the Irish lines and the castle opened on him, and twice he was repulsed, but still renewed his efforts.

Q. Who commanded the Irish in that quarter ?

A. Colonel Burke, who pressed the enemy close by and successfully.

Q. What action did the English cavalry take ?

A. The English cavalry being held in check were unable to advance.

Q. What move did the English infantry make ?

A. They moved along the northern margin of the marsh, and began to break through in battal-

ions and companies. They too were checked, and for some time held immovable.

**Q.** At this trying moment what did Colonel Burke find ?

**A.** He found that his supply of musket-balls was exhausted ; and he urgently demanded a fresh supply.

**Q.** Did this supply arrive ?

**A.** Yes ; but by some fatal blunder, or treacherous design, it was found that the balls with which they had been served did not suit their firearms, and consequently were useless. \*

**Q.** What did the soldiers do after exhausting their last shot ?

**A.** They cut the round buttons from their coats, fired them, and discharged even their ramrods at the enemy, and then in rage and despair stood to offer their bodies as a last resistance, and died fighting where they stood.

**Q.** Was the pass taken ?

**A.** The pass was taken ; the castle grounds were gained and barriers thrown up there, to impede the Irish cavalry.

**Q.** What did the English infantry cross ?

---

\* It was found, on examining the ammunition with which they had been supplied, that while the men were armed with French firelocks, the balls that had been served to them were cast for English muskets, of which the calibre was larger, and that they were consequently useless.—Haverty's History of Ireland, page 661.

A. The English infantry now crossed the marsh in force, and formed to carry the left and centre.

Q. At this sight what rang through the Irish lines?

A. A wild and piercing cry of "*treason*" rang along the Irish lines.

Q. What was now carried?

A. The left and centre of the Irish army were now carried by the enemy.

Q. To what position did the English now direct their attention?

A. To the right wing. The Irish soldiers being ignorant of what had passed, still pressed the foe beyond their lines, and were still victorious.

Q. Being now surrounded on all sides, and attacked front and rear, what was their fate.

A. They were overwhelmed and literally cut to pieces; nearly all the infantry on that side being slaughtered where they stood; and the shades of night closed on the scene of carnage.

Q. What befell the Castle of Aughrim?

A. It was at length taken, and all within it put to the sword without mercy.

Q. What became of the Irish cavalry?

A. The Irish cavalry baffled in their design to support the infantry, which became intermingled with the horse and foot of the enemy, after aiding sometime in the retreat, withdrew to the southwest and pursued their route to Loughrea, while the infantry crossed the bog to the west, and moved in the direction of Galway.

Q. Was their retreat regular ?

A. Yes ; the retreat of these portions of the army was regular and unbroken ; but the fugitives were cut down without mercy.

Q. What was now disregarded ?

A. The cry of quarter was totally disregarded ; and the slaughter of the straggling bands continued far into the night.

Q. In this butchery, what troops were conspicuous ?

A. The Danish cavalry, remarkable through the day only for pusillanimity, became the "best pursuers," through the night, until a fortuitous circumstance put an end to the pursuit.

Q. Relate the circumstance, which caused those Danish cowards to halt in their murderous pursuit ?

A. An Irish drummer who was lying wounded by the wayside, was ordered by a man named O'Reilly to beat the charge. It was done, and on hearing it the Danish cavalry halted, and believing the Irish about to rally, retired to the main body, and the vanquished pursued their retreat unmolested. Thus ended the disastrous day of Aughrim.

Q. What is to be remarked of the battle of Aughrim ?

A. Up to the death of St. Ruth, no pending battle was ever more prophetic of victory. After it none was ever so unaccountably lost in the presence of numerous officers of experience and ability.

Q. What part did fortune seem to play on this memorable day ?

A. It would seem as if fortune held the balance of the day, to elicit deeds of unexampled heroism, and inverted it in the hour of victory to maintain her proverbial fickleness.

Q. What was the English loss in killed and wounded ?

A. About 3,000, and among them were 200 officers of all grades.

Q. What was the loss on the Irish side ?

A. About 4,000, killed, and 526 of all ranks taken prisoners. Those were nearly all killed after the death of St. Ruth ; for " up to that," says Taylor, " the Irish had lost scarcely a man. "

Q. On the next day where did Ginckle encamp ?

A. He encamped on the heights of Kilcommo-  
don and buried his dead.

Q. What was done with the bodies of the Irish who strewed the hill, and lay scattered over the country for miles ?

A. They were stripped and left unburied, to be " devoured by wild animals and birds of prey. "

Q. What did the country people do ?

A. They fled the vicinity of the British army, and retired to the woods and mountains as their only refuge.

Q. What was done with the body of St. Ruth ?

A. The body of St. Ruth, according to the English annalist, was stripped and thrown into a bog

but a more recent and better authority says, that his ashes lie in the roofless church of Athunree, beside those of Lord Galway, who fell upon the same field of battle.

Q. What was the character of St. Ruth ?

A. He was undoubtedly a brave and able general ; but his merits were counterbalanced by his excessive presumption, self-confidence, vanity and obstinacy.

Q. What city did Ginckle next lay siege to ?

A. Galway, which the citizens capitulated on favorable terms ; then, the Dutch general marched to the city of Limerick.

Q. What steps did he take on arriving at Limerick ?

A. He invested the devoted city on three sides, and opened on it a deadly fire from his batteries, which mounted sixty guns of the largest calibre.

Q. How was it attacked from the river ?

A. By an English fleet which hurled its missiles right and left, but the valor of the brave Limerick men was more than a match for all.

Q. After a siege of sixty days, what did Ginckle see ?

A. He saw that the task of reducing the place was hopeless.

Q. What was finally determined ?

A. Both parties being weary of hostilities, it was determined to conclude the protracted war by a treaty.

Q. What was accordingly suspended ?

A. A cessation of arms was granted to afford an opportunity for settling the terms of capitulation.

Q. Who was the commander of the Irish forces in Limerick ?

A. General Sarsfield ?

Q. Was Sarsfield in favor of the treaty ?

A. No ; but a reluctant assent to this measure, was wrung from him by the other leaders on the 23rd of September, 1691.

Q. By the 3rd of October what was drawn up ?

A. The Articles of the Treaty of Limerick.

---

## CHAPTER XLII.

### The Treaty of Limerick.

Q. How many were the *civil* articles of this famous " Treaty ? "

A. The *civil* articles of Limerick, which Sarsfield vainly hoped might prove the *Magna Charta* of his co-religionists, were thirteen in number.

Q. What did the first article of Limerick guarantee to the Catholics ?

A. It guaranteed to them the full and free exercise of their religion, as enjoyed in the reign of King Charles the Second.

Q. What did this article further provide ?

A. It further provided, that " their majesties, as soon as parliament would meet. would procure

for the Catholics additional legislative security, for the freedom of their worship."

Q. What did article II. guarantee?

A. It guaranteed pardon and protection to all who had taken up arms for King James, on taking the oath of allegiance to William and Mary.

Q. What did articles III. IV. V. and VI. provide?

A. They extended the provisions of Arts. 1. and II. to merchants and other classes of men.

Q. What did article VII. permit?

A. It permitted "every nobleman and gentleman compromised in the said articles "to carry side arms, and keep "a gun in their houses."

Q. What right does article VIII. give?

A. It gives the right of removing goods and chattels without search.

Q. To what does article IX. refer?

A. It refers to the oath to be administered to such Roman Catholics, as submit to their majesties' government.

Q. What was the oath to be administered?

A. It was thus:—"I, A. B., do solemnly promise and swear that I will be faithful, and bear true allegiance to their majesties, King William and Queen Mary; &c."

Q. What did article X. guarantee?

A. It guaranteed that "no person or persons who shall at any time hereafter break these articles, or any of them, shall thereby make or cause



any other person or persons to forfeit or lose the benefit of them."

Q. To what do articles XI. and XII. relate ?

A. They relate to the ratification of the articles "within eight months or sooner."

Q. To what does article XIII. refer ?

A. To the debts of "Colonel John Brown, commissary of the Irish army, to several Protestants," and arranges for their satisfaction.

Q. When and where were these articles signed ?

A. On the 3rd of October 1691, they were signed before Limerick, at the well known "Treaty Stone," \* on the Clare side of the Shannon.

Q. By whom was the Treaty of Limerick signed ?

A. By Lord Scravenmore, Generals MacKey, Talmash, and Ginckle, and the Lords Justices Porter and Coningsby, for King William.

Q. Who were the signers on the Irish side ?

A. They were Sarsfield, Earl of Lucan, Viscount Galmoy, Sir Toby Butler, and Colonels Purcell, Cusack, Dillon and Brown.

Q. What were issued from Westminster on the following February ?

A. Royal letters-patent, confirmatory of the treaty, were issued in the name of the King and Queen.

---

\* The large stone which served Sarsfield for a chair and writing desk, while signing the articles of the Treaty of Limerick, is still shown as an object of historic interest, to the stranger visiting that famed city. It stands on the right bank of the River Shannon, at the foot of Thomond Bridge.

Q. What did their majesties promise in those royal letters-patent ?

A. They promised that they would ratify and confirm every clause, matter and thing contained in the said Treaty of Limerick.

Q. What provision was made by the treaty for officers and soldiers, who might refuse to remain in Ireland under the Williamite government.

A. They were to be sent to France at the expense of the government, and could depart in whole bodies, companies or parties.

Q. What privilege was granted to the garrison of Limerick ?

A. The garrison of Limerick might march out with all their arms, guns and baggage, "colors flying and drums beating."

Q. What was the strength of the Irish army at Limerick ?

A. Fifteen thousand strong, of whom about 13,000 resolved to depart from Ireland and enter the service of France.

Q. Two days after the treaty was signed, what arrived ?

A. A French fleet arrived off the coast, bearing reinforcements and a large supply of military stores. Never was there a more trying moment for the Irish leaders.

Q. Why so ?

A. Because supplies sufficient to insure them a

triumphant victory were at hand ; but the honor of their nation was pledged ; the Treaty of Limerick was signed ; that " Treaty " they deemed inviolable.

Q. What was done with the French fleet ?

A. It was dismissed, taking with it several Irish regiments who, preferred to pass the remainder of their days in a foreign land, rather than live in bondage at home.

Q. What did these Irish regiments form in France ?

A. They formed the commencement of the celebrated Irish Brigade, which during the last century, contributed so greatly to the honor of French arms.

Q. What is said of King James ?

A. It is said that he came down from St. Germain, to receive in person, his brave and devoted Irish Soldiers, as they stepped on French soil.

Q. What national rights were immediately granted them ?

A. The rights of French citizenship without undergoing the forms of naturalization.

Q. To what did many of them rise ?

A. Many of them rose to eminent positions in war and in diplomacy, and became founders of distinguished families.

Q. What do we see at the present day, 1878 ?

A. We see one of their descendants (Marshal

McMahon) at the head of the French Republic, directing the helm of state.

Q. By whom was the Treaty of Limerick denounced ?

A. By many of the Protestant ministers.

Q. To where did the Lords Justices, Porter and Coningsby return after signing the Treaty of Limerick ?

A. To Dublin.

Q. What did they attend on the Sunday after their return.

A. They attended service in Christ's Church.

Q. Who was the preacher ?

A. Doctor Dopping, bishop of Meath.

Q. What was the subject of his sermon ?

A. The late important events at Limerick.

Q. What did he denounce ?

A. The Articles of the Treaty.

Q. What did he declare ?

A. That Protestants were not bound to keep faith with Papists.

Q. Was Dopping's doctrine approved by all the divines of his party ?

A. No; for on the next Sunday in the same church the Protestant bishop of Kildare, demonstrated the obligation of keeping public faith.

Q. What did Dean Synge preach on the following Sunday ?

A. He preached a conciliatory discourse. His text was, " keep peace with all men if it be possible. "

Q. Was the Treaty of Limerick faithfully observed by the government ?

A. No ; it was shamefully violated.

Q. What did the English parliament enact ?

A. By an audacious usurpation of power over the Irish legislature, it enacted, " that all the members of the Irish legislature should take the oath of Supremacy. "

Q. What assembled in 1692 ?

A. The Irish parliament, when a few Catholic peers, and a small number of Catholic commoners took their seats.

Q. What was one of the first acts of the victorious majority ?

A. To frame an oath to be taken by members of both Houses, in direct contravention to that prescribed by the ninth *civil* article of the *Treaty*.

---

### CHAPTER XLIII.

#### The Reign of William and Mary (concluded).

Q. What was the nature of this oath ?

A. It was blasphemous in the highest degree.

Q. What did it deny ?

A. This oath solemnly and explicitly denied " that in the Sacrament of the Lord's Supper there is any transubstantiation of the elements. "

Q. What did it affirm ?

A. This oath affirmed, " that the invocation of

the Virgin Mary, or any other Saint, and the Sac-  
 rifice of the Mass, as they are now used in the  
 Church of Rome, are damnable and idolatrous."

Q, What effect had this abominable oath on the  
 Catholic members ?

A. As a matter of course, the Catholic peers and  
 commoners retired from both Houses, rather than  
 take such an oath.

Q. What was the consequence ?

A. The Irish parliament assumed in 1692, that  
 exclusively Protestant character which it contin-  
 ued to maintain, till its extinction in 1800.

Q. About the same time what was established ?

A. That ancient engine of oppression, a com-  
 mission to inquire into estates forfeited.

Q. In a short time after what was decreed ?

A. It was decreed that 1,060,792 acres were  
 escheated to the crown. This was almost the last  
 fragment of the patrimony of the Catholic inhabi-  
 tants.

Q. In 1695, what was opened ?

A. Lord Capel opened the second Irish parlia-  
 ment, summoned by King William.

Q. What did his Lordship declare in his speech  
 from the throne ?

A. He assured his delighted auditors that the  
 king was intent upon a firm settlement of Ireland,  
 upon a Protestant interest.

Q. What did the House immediately vote on  
 hearing these good tidings.

A. Large supplies were at once voted to his majesty.

Q. What was appointed ?

A. A committee to consider the *Penal Laws* already in force against the Catholics.

Q. Was it with a view of repealing them as the king promised ?

A. No ; but to add others to their number, thus, making the prospect which now opened before the Catholics of Ireland a gloomy one indeed.

Q. Why was the prospect such a gloomy one ?

A. Because they had arrived at the beginning of that system of grinding oppression, which was soon to be put in operation against them, and described by Dr. Johnson, as more grievous than all the " Ten Pagan persecutions of the Christians."

Q. What did the Irish Catholics perceive ?

A. They perceived that in this reign of King William, so vaunted for its liberality, the blessings and liberties of the British Constitution, if any such there were, existed not for them.

Q. Why so ?

A. Because they were robbed of their substance, and abused in their persons, but no redress by the laws of the land, and no refuge from their cruel enemies even in the pledged faith of a solemn treaty.

Q. Did not the English government repress such wrongs ?

A. No ; no effectual means were used by the government for repressing such wrongs ; so that, we

may well adopt the language of Dr. Curry, that these representations made by the Lords Justices were only a "pretence."

Q. Of what materials was the Irish House of Commons at this time composed?

A. Chiefly of the sons of Cromwellian adventurers, and other supporters of what was called "The Protestant interest."

Q. How did the parliament violate the Treaty of Limerick?

A. By an act disabling the Catholics from educating their children, or being guardians of their own or other people's children.

Q. In what other way was it violated?

A. By an act disarming the Catholics.

Q. What was the nature of another act passed?

A. To banish all Catholic priests and prelates from the kingdom.

Q. What bill, then, did those worthy representatives of English justice bring in?

A. Having thus shamefully violated the *Treaty*, they gravely brought in a bill "to confirm the Articles of Limerick."

Q. What does Dr. Cooke Taylor say of this bill?

A. He says the very title of the bill, "contains evidence of its injustice" It is styled "A Bill for the Confirmation of Articles (not the Articles) made at the surrender of Limerick." And the preamble shows that the little word *the* was not accidentally omitted.



**Q.** How is the bill worded ?

**A.** It runs thus :—“ That the said articles, or so much of them as may consist with the safety and welfare of your majesty’s subjects in these kingdoms, may be confirmed, ” &c.

**Q.** Did this unjust bill pass both Houses ?

**A.** Yes ; it passed the Commons without much difficulty ; it was however, strenuously resisted in the House of Lords, and when it was at length carried, a strong protest against it was signed by some of the principal Lords and Protestant bishops of Ireland.

**Q.** Did King William give his royal assent to these acts of parliament, in violation of the Treaty of Limerick ?

**A.** He did, notwithstanding, the solemn promises he made in his royal letters-patent, to obtain for the Catholics additional security for the freedom of their worship.

**Q.** What did William commit against the Irish Catholics, by this act of deception and breach of faith ?

**A.** He committed a twofold act of injustice against them. Firstly, by depriving them of such securities as they had, and secondly, by imposing new and grievous oppressions upon them on the account of their religion.

**Q.** What does the historian, John Mitchell, tell us ?

**A.** He tells us, it is expressly on account of the

shameful breach of faith on the part of the king, that Orange squires and gentlemen, from that day to this, have been enthusiastically toasting "the glorious, pious, and immortal memory of the great and good King William."

Q. What petition did the English parliament present to William in 1698?

A. A petition praying him to discourage the woollen manufacture of Ireland.

Q. What was William's answer?

A. "I shall do all that in me lies to discourage the woollen manufacture of Ireland, and to encourage the linen manufacture therein."

Q. Did William keep his promise to discourage the woollen trade?

A. He did.

Q. In whose hands was this branch of manufacture?

A. This branch of manufacture was chiefly in the hands of the Catholics of the west and south.

Q. What additional duties were added on woollen cloths?

A. Four shillings additional duty were added on every 20s. for Broad-cloth exported out of Ireland; and 2s. for course kersey &c.

Q. What was its effect?

A. The woollen trade was well-nigh ruined.

Q. Was the woollen trade in Ireland prosperous at this period?

A. So much so, that woollen fabrics were export-

ed in great quantities to foreign countries, and in many cases the Irish manufacturer was enabled to undersell the English.

Q. What was England now trying to obtain ?

A. The entire control of this gainful trade ; hence, the competition of Ireland gave great umbrage.

Q. What act was passed by parliament in 1699 ?

A. An act was passed which minutely regulated everything relating to wool.

Q. What was prohibited ?

A. All export, or Irish woollen cloths was prohibited, except to England and Wales.

Q. Why was this exception made ?

A. As a delusion, because heavy duties, amounting to a prohibition, prevented Irish cloth from being imported into England and Wales.

Q. Where had the Irish wool to be sent ?

A. To England in a raw state, to be woven in Yorkshire ; and even this export was cramped by appointing one single English port, Barnstable, as the only point where it could legally enter.

Q. What were impeded at this time ?

A. All attempts at foreign commerce in Ireland were at this time impeded ; even no colonial produce, under those laws, could be carried to Ireland, until after it should have first entered an English port, and have been unloaded there.

Q. What was the object of these unjust laws ?

A. To secure to English merchants, and shipowners a monopoly of all such trade ?

**Q.** Had they the desired effect ?

**A.** They had, so that in a few years afterwards, the Dean of St. Patrick's could truly write : " The conveniency of ports and harbors, which nature had bestowed so liberally upon this kingdom, is of no more use to us than a beautiful prospect to a man shut up in a dungeon."

**Q.** Who published a book in 1698, denying the right of the English parliament to bind Ireland by its own enactments ?

**A.** William Molyneux, one of the members for Dublin University.

**Q.** Did the book attract much attention ?

**A.** It did, and was immediately replied to by two writers, named Carey and Atwood.

**Q.** What was then appointed by the English parliament ?

**A.** A committee was appointed to examine the obnoxious pamphlet.

**Q.** On the report of the committee, what was resolved ?

**A.** It was unanimously resolved " that the said book should be burned by the hands of the common hangman, as of dangerous tendency to the crown and people of England, by denying the power of the king and parliament of England to bind the kingdom and people of Ireland.

**Q.** Did King William keep his promise to encourage the linen manufacture of Ireland ?

**A.** He did not.

Q. What were now already numbered ?

A. King William's days were now numbered. On the 8th of March, 1702, when little more than fifty years of age, he died from the effects of a fall from his horse.

Q. What is said of William's reign over Ireland ?

A. It is synonymous, in the minds of that people with a reign of disaster, proscription and spoilation, of violated faith and broken compacts.

Q. Was his death much regretted ?

A. His death was little regretted, save in Holland, by anybody ; even by the squires of the " Ascendency " in Ireland, who long toasted in their cups his " glorious, pious, and immortal memory."

Q. What of William's personal quality ?

A. He possessed no personal quality that could endear him to any human being, unless the common quality of personal bravery may be so accounted.

Q. How was his fair fame stained ?

A. By his faithlessness and cruelty ; and he will be ever known in history, as the Treaty-breaker of Limerick, and the Assassin of Glencoe.

---

## CHAPTER XLIV.

### The Reign of Queen Anne.

Q. Who succeeded William on the throne of England ?

A. The Princess Anne, daughter of King James Second.

Q. What title did she bear, before her accession to the throne ?

A. She bore the title of Anne of Denmark, because she was married to the Prince of Denmark.

Q. How did Queen Anne repay the Irish for their loyalty and bravery, in vindicating the rights of her father James II ?

A. She repaid them with a code of penal laws.

Q. What was the penal code ?

A. It was a compilation of merciless and sanguinary Acts of parliament, dictated by a satanical spirit, for the express purpose of punishing Catholics who would not abjure the *Faith of Christ*.

Q. What laws did this diabolical code violate ?

A. It violated equally the laws of God and the laws of man ; it was against the rules of reason and justice, by which all men ought to be governed.

Q. State some of the penalties inflicted by this code ?

A. By this infernal code all Catholic priests and Catholic schoolmasters were banished from the kingdom.

Q. What punishment would be inflicted upon a Catholic priest, who would return ?

A. If he would not abjure his religion within three days after his return, he was hanged and quartered.

Q. What fine did this code impose for saying Mass ?

A. It imposed a fine of £120, for saying Mass and £60, for hearing it.

Q. From what did it shut out the Catholics ?

A. From all offices of power and trust, even the most insignificant.

Q. What rights did it take from Catholic lords and gentlemen ?

A. It stripped them of their right to sit in parliament, or to be chosen members of the House of Commons.

Q. Could Catholics vote at elections ?

A. No ; it was forbidden by these *Savage Laws*.

Q. How were Catholics taxed ?

A. Every Catholic was double-taxed who, refused to abjure his religion, and become an apostate.

Q. How were they fined who refused to attend the Protestant church on the Sabbath ?

A. They were fined at the rate of £20 a month for keeping away from that church, to go to which they deemed apostacy.

Q. From what other rights were the Catholics deprived ?

A. From keeping arms in their houses for their defence, from maintaining suits at law, from being guardians or executors, from practising in law or physic, and from travelling five miles from their houses.

Q. What power did this godless code give to any four justices of the peace ?

A. It enabled any four justices of the peace, in

case a man had been convicted of not going to church, to call him before them, to compel him to abjure his religion, or, if he refused, to sentence him to banishment for life (without judge or jury).

Q. And if he chanced to return, what was his lot?

A. To suffer death.

Q. What could two justices of the peace do?

A. Any two justices of the peace could call before them any Catholic, order him to declare on oath, where and when he heard Mass, who were present, and the name and residence of any priest or schoolmaster that he might know of.

Q. What was the consequence if he refused to obey?

A. If he refused to obey this inhuman inquisition, they had power to condemn him (without judge or jury,) to a year's imprisonment.

Q. Did these penal laws prevent Catholics from purchasing lands?

A. Yes; no Catholic could purchase any lands, nor even hold under a lease for more than thirty-one years.

Q. What could any Protestant do, if he suspected any one of holding property in trust for a Catholic?

A. He might file a bill against the suspected trustee, and take the estate or property from him.

Q. What other power did this code place in Protestant hands?



A. If a Protestant saw that the produce of the farm of a Catholic exceeded the amount of the rent, by more than one-third, he might dispossess the Catholic and enter on the lease in his stead.

Q. Suppose a Catholic had a valuable horse, what could his Protestant neighbor do ?

A. He could take the horse away, upon tendering the Catholic five pounds.

Q. What steps were taken to deprive Catholics of all justice ?

A. To prevent the smallest chance of justice in these and similar cases, none but known Protestants were to be jurymen in the trial of all such cases.

Q. What power was given to the militia ?

A. The militia had power to take for their use, the horses of Catholics ; and besides this, Catholics were compelled to pay double tax for the militia.

Q. What were declared unlawful ?

A. All marriages between Protestants and Catholics were annulled, and the priests who would celebrate such marriages, were condemned to be hanged.

Q. What if one of the sons of a Catholic father became a Protestant ?

A. This son was to possess all his father's property. The father could neither sell, mortgage, nor lease by will any portion out of his estate, by whatever title he might hold it ; he was to be a tenant all his life-time.

**Q.** Contrast this savage law of England with the Divine Precept ?

**A.** "Honor thy father and thy mother" says the Divine Precept "that thy days may be long in the land which the Lord thy God, giveth thee," "Dishonor them," says this diabolical English code, and bring the grey hairs of your parent to the grave with grief and tears !

---

## CHAPTER XLV.

### The Reign of Queen Anne (concluded).

**Q.** Did the Catholics take any measures to prevent the passage of this monstrous bill ?

**A.** Yes ; certain Catholic barristers living under protection, not being yet excluded from the practice of their profession, petitioned for a hearing at the bar of the House of Commons.

**Q.** Was their petition granted ?

**A.** Yes ; and accordingly, Counsellor Malone, the ancestor of three generations of scholars and orators, Sir Stephen Rice, one of the spotless characters of the age, formerly chief justice under King James, and Sir Theobald Butler, spoke against the bill.

**Q.** How did those learned gentlemen sustain their cause ?

**A.** Never was a national cause more worthily pleaded ; never was the folly of religious persecu-

tions more forcibly exhibited, than on this memorable occasion.

Q. What did they place before the House in all its hideous forms?

A. The injustice, barbarity and flagrant immorality of the pending bill; which, if passed into law, would give the child a right to rob his father and then to cut his throat. This bill, the very thought of which was enough to cause the most courageous heart to shudder, was spontaneously condemned by the voice of nature.

Q. What was the result of their pleading?

A. Neither the justness of their cause, nor the strength of their arguments, had any effect upon the oligarchy who heard them.

Q. How were these venerable and learned jurists answered?

A. They were answered by quibbles and cavils unworthy of record. Next day this bill, to prevent the "further growth of popery" was passed into law, and a few days after it received the royal assent.

Q. On the 17th of March, 1705, what did the House of Commons proclaim?

A. That "informing against Papists was an honorable service to the government," and that all magistrates and others who failed to put the penal laws into execution, "were betrayers to the liberties of the kingdom.

Q. What were now offered?

A. Rewards were offered for the discovery of Catholic prelates, priests, and teachers, according to the following whimsical scale:—For discovering a bishop £50, for each clergyman not registered £20; and for a schoolmaster £10.

Q. What royal proclamation was issued in 1709?

A. That, "all registered priests" were to take "the oath of abjuration before the 25th of March, 1710," under penalty of *premunire*.

Q. Under this proclamation and the tariff of rewards just cited, what grew up?

A. There grew up a class of men, infamous and detestable, known by the nickname of "*priest-hunters*."

Q. Who was one of the most successful of these traffickers in blood?

A. A Portuguese Jew, named Garcia, who settled at Dublin.

Q. What is related of this Jew?

A. He was very skilful at detection.

Q. What did Garcia sometimes affect?

A. He sometimes put on the mien of a priest, for he affected to be one, and then working himself into the good graces of some confiding Catholic, got a clue to the whereabouts of the clergy and informed on them.

Q. What was Garcia's success in 1718?

A. He succeeded in arresting seven unregistered priests, for whose detection he had a sum equal to two or three thousand dollars of American money.

Q. To what excess was this inhuman trade carried ?

A. To such an excess was this trade carried, that a reaction set in, and "the priest catcher's occupation became exceedingly odious both to Protestants and Catholics " that " the ruffians of this calling were often assailed with showers of stones, by both Protestants and Catholics.

Q. Was a bribe held out to Catholic priests to become Protestants ?

A. Yes ; a grant of forty pounds per annum was made to every " Popish " priest, who should embrace the Established religion.

Q. What was the object of the Irish Protestant parliament, in their shameless infraction of the Treaty of Limerick, and their violent and ferocious enactments against their Catholic fellow countrymen ?

A. The Protestants were haunted by incessant fears, that the Catholics would try to recover the estates which had been wrested from them, by every variety of flagitious crime ; and they, therefore, labored to depress and weaken to the utmost the object of their terror.

Q. Were there any instances of Protestant good faith in that dark and dreary period ?

A. Yes ; there were many instances in private life. Estant Catholics who dreaded " Protestant discoveries," often made over their properties in trust, to friendly Protestants, even in the humblest ranks,

in order to evade the operation of the demon law.

Q. Did the Protestants who were thus confided in, abuse the trust which the Catholics reposed in them?

A. No; and it is even said that one poor Protestant barber, had half the Catholic estates of a southern county in trust.

Q. Was there, in this reign, a rumor of an attempt by the son of James the Second, to recover the crown of these kingdoms?

A. Yes; in 1708.

Q. What effect had that rumor on the affairs of the Irish Catholics?

A. It served as a pretext to the Protestant authorities, to arrest forty-one of the principal Catholic nobility and gentry.

Q. How did the Irish Catholics at that time feel disposed towards James the Second's family?

A. They regarded them with aversion and disgust.

Q. Why so?

A. Because they had a bitter experience of their tyrannical disposition, treachery, falsehood, and base ingratitude to those who had fought and bled in their cause, and lost their all in their service.

Q. Did the Irish parliament, in the reign of Queen Anne, show a single spark of national feeling?

A. Yes; in 1709, a money bill was thrown out,

because the English privy council had presumed, to alter it.

Q. But, take all their actions into consideration, what must be admitted ?

A. It must be admitted that the collective bigots of this reign, were wholly unworthy of the name of a parliament.

Q. Why so ?

A. Because they permitted the woollen trade to be sacrificed without a struggle, and allowed the bold propositions of Molyneux, one of their own number, to be condemned and reprobated without a protest.

Q. By what principles were these Irish Protestant parliaments actuated, during Queen Ann's reign ?

A. By principles of bigotry, cruelty and avarice, They thought of nothing else, but passing enactments for the purpose of robbing, tormenting, and annihilating their fellow man.

Q. What will afford consolation to the Irish reader, from the irksome tale of oppression at home, during the dreary reigns of William, Anne, and the first two Georges ?

A. To cast a glance over the histories and maps of Europe, and there he will see his countrymen eulogized for their bravery on her battle-fields, and carrying off wreaths of glory, wherever gallant feats at arms were to be performed; and especially if they had the good luck to meet on some foreign field, either Englishmen or the allies of England.

Q. Was the high character of these famous *Sons of Erin* confined to the field of battle ?

A. No; at the principal capitals of Europe, Paris, Vienna, Madrid, their wit, talents, and courtesy, raised them to the favor of princes.

Q. What important civil and diplomatic offices were entrusted to them ?

A. They were appointed as embassies of peace and war, governors of provinces, and entrusted with the highest administrative offices of the state; while their kinsmen in Ireland were declared incapable, of filling the humblest public employments.

Q. Whom did those *Exiles of Erin* meet on different occasions ?

A. They met British ambassadors abroad as equals, and checked or countermanded the imperial policy of Great Britain.

Q. How did their glorious exploits, on the battle fields of Europe tell on the English ?

A. The blows they struck at Landan, at Cremona, at Almanza, and Fontenoy, were sensibly felt by every British statesman; when, in the bitterness of defeat, an English king cursed "the laws that deprived him of such subjects" the doom of the penal code was pronounced.

Q. How were the last years of Queen Anne employed ?

A. In intrigues and preparation with the Jacobite leaders throughout the three kingdoms, for the destruction of the Protestant succession.



Q. When did Queen Anne die ?

A. She died on the 1st of August, 1714, the last of the House of Stuart, recognized as sovereign of England.

Q. What did she leave behind her, with regard to the Irish administration ?

A. She left so black a record that, it would have been strange indeed, if, the Irish nation, had ever desired to see the face of a Stuart again.

Q. What is probable ?

A. Yet it is probable that, she was secretly a Catholic like all her family.

Q. What is certain ?

A. It is certain that she was bitterly displeased at the "Protestant succession," now secured by law to the House of Hanover.

Q. What is a historical fact ?

A. That she was for setting aside the Protestant succession and bringing in her Catholic brother, James the Third.

Q. How long did Queen Anne reign ?

A. Twelve years (1702 to 1714).

Q. How does Montesquieu, a celebrated French writer, brand the code of penal laws passed by Queen Anne ?

A. " This horrid Code, " says he " was conceived by devils, written in human gore, and registered in hell. "

---

CHAPTER XLVI.

The Reign of George the First.

Q. On the death of Anne, who succeeded to the throne.

A. George the First, Elector of Hanover.

Q. Upon assuming the reins of government, to what party did he attach himself?

A. To the Whig party, which had strenuously advocated his accession.

Q. After the accession of George I., who were dismissed?

A. All Tories were instantly dismissed from office, and the government placed entirely in the hands of Whigs.

Q. Why were the Tories dismissed from all offices?

A. Because the Tories were looked upon as Jacobites, and favoring the accession of James III., called the "Pretender."

Q. When the English parliament met, what bills of impeachment were found?

A. Bills of impeachment for high treason were quickly found against the Duke of Ormond, Lords Orford and Bollingbroke.

Q. Why for high treason?

A. For having contributed to bring about the peace of Utrecht by traitorous means, with a view of changing the Protestant succession.

Q. What did these proceedings excite?

A. They excited the indignation of the people, the flame of rebellion broke out in Scotland.

Q. What did Ormond and Bollingbroke do ?

A. They went to the continent, where they offered their services to King James the Third.

Q. On the 15th of September, 1715, what did the Earl of Mar, set up ?

A. He raised the standard of rebellion, and at the head of 10,000 men proclaimed the son of James II., as the lawful king of Great Britain.

Q. Was the rebellion crushed ?

A. Yes ; and the most exemplary severity exercised against the leaders.

Q. What is to be remarked of this rebellion ?

A. This Scottish insurrection is of small moment to Irish history, save in so far as it furnished a new pretext for fresh atrocities upon the Catholics.

Q. Did the Irish Catholics advocate the cause of James's son ?

A. No ; we do not even hear of any Irish officer of distinction, who came from the continent, to join the Pretender's cause in Scotland.

Q. What did the Earl of Mar afterwards affirm ?

A. That the Duke of Berwick, who was very popular with the Irish troops in France, had been urged to take the chief command of the movement, in order to draw into it some Irish regiments.

Q. Did the Duke accept the command ?

A. No ; he positively refused to repair to Scot-

land, though he was half-brother to the " Pretender."

Q. What have some writers on this period of Irish history, given to the Catholics ?

A. They have given the Irish Catholics the very doubtful praise of loyalty, for their extreme quietness and passiveness at this time.

Q. What may we assume ?

A. Though the Irish cared very little now for the Stuart family ; yet, we may assume that, any revolution which would shake off the shackles of oppression, under which they were then groaning, and give them a chance of redeeming their nationality, would have been desirable.

Q. How were the Irish situated at this time ?

A. They were disarmed, impoverished, and discouraged ; could not own a musket, nor a sabre, nor a horse over the value of five guineas.

Q. What else ?

A. They had no leaders at home, nor any possibility of organizing a combined movement ; so closely were they watched and held down by an iron hand of oppression.

Q. Why did the Scottish insurrection furnish a pretext for fresh atrocities upon the Irish Catholics, since they were quiet ?

A. Charles, the Third, the " Pretender " was a Catholic, and as the Irish Protestant government knew that the oppressed Catholics of that country, if not always ready for insurrection, ought to

have been, so, numerous arrests were made, during the Scottish insurrection.

Q. Who were still in the country ?

A. There were still some forlorn Catholic peers dwelling in their dismal country-seats, debarred from attending parliament, endeavoring to attract no remark, and too happy if they could secretly keep in their stables a few horses for hunting.

Q. What then seemed desirable for the government ?

A. To take precautions against these sad relics of the once proud nation.

Q. Accordingly, what orders were issued ?

A. Orders to seize upon the Earls of Antrim and Westmeath, Lords Netterville, Cahir, and Dillon.

Q. What followed ?

A. These lords, with a great number of untitled gentlemen were suddenly seized upon, and shut up in Dublin Castle, "on suspicion."

Q. How long were they kept there ?

A. Until the insurrection was over.

Q. In the sixth year of the reign of George the First, what law did the English parliament enact ?

A. A law, declaring itself possessed of full power and authority, to make laws and statutes of sufficient force and validity, to bind the people of the kingdom of Ireland.

Q. What else did the English parliament do ?

A. The English parliament also deprived the

Irish House of Lords of its final jurisdiction, in cases of appeal.

Q. Was not this a gross usurpation of power ?

A. Of course it was ; but, Ireland, owing to divisions among her inhabitants, was too weak to make any resistance.

Q. Was the Irish parliament during this reign, engaged in imposing new penalties on the Catholics ?

A. Yes ; such was the infatuation of its bigotry, a bill was actually passed by both Houses, which decreed a personal penalty on every Catholic ecclesiastic, of so revoltingly indecent a nature that it cannot be explicitly mentioned.

Q. Did that bill pass into a law ?

A. No ; Sir Robert Walpole, the English prime minister, exerted his influence for very shame's sake, to procure its defeat in the English privy council.

Q. Did the council reject the bill ?

A. Yes ; and this was the first occasion in which any penal law against Catholics, met with such an obstacle in England.

Q. Who at this period, suddenly plunged impetuously into the tumult of Irish politics ?

A. Dean Swift.

Q. Who was Dean Swift ?

A. An Irish Protestant divine of distinguished abilities.

Q. In what did he unite Protestants and Catholics ?

A. In opposition to a government scheme for empowering a man, named Wood, to coin copper money for Ireland. His " Drapier's Letters," which were written on this subject, obtained deserved celebrity at that time.

Q. In what did the Dean succeed, by the spirit of resistance which he aroused.

A. He succeeded in preventing the establishment of a national bank, and the introduction of a debased copper coinage into the country.

Q. What did Swift's haughty and indignant denunciations of the oligarchy of the hour, produce ?

A. Striking effects. The humblest of the community began to raise their heads, and to fix their eyes steadily on public affairs and public characters.

Q. What now began to be discussed ?

A. Questions of currency, of trade and of the administration of justice, were earnestly discussed in the press and in society.

Q. What was gradually promoted ?

A. A spirit of independence was gradually promoted, where hitherto only servility had reigned.

Q. What did Dean Swift now become ?

A. He became the most popular man in Ireland ; especially with the shopkeepers and tradesmen.

Q. As the Dean grew in popularity in Ireland, what did he become to the king's servants ?

A. He became a more intolerable enemy of the king's servants in that country, and especially of Primate Boulter.

---

## CHAPTER XLVII.

### The Reign of George the First (concluded.)

Q. To understand the value of the Dean's example and inspiration, what must we do?

A. We must read over again his castigations of Wharton, of Burnet, of Boulter, of Whitshed, of Allan, and all the leaders of the oligarchy, in the Irish parliament.

Q. When we have done so, what shall we see?

A. We shall see at once how his imperial reputation, his personal position, and every faculty of his powerful mind, were employed alike to combat injustice and proscription, to promote freedom of opinion and of trade, to punish the abuses of judicial power, and to cultivate and foster a spirit of self-reliance and economy among all classes.

Q. What does the Dean give in his graphic tracts and letters?

A. He gives a painfully vivid picture of the desolation of the rural districts of Ireland.

Q. What does he often lament in those graphic letters?

A. He laments the wanton and utter destruction



of timber, which had left bare and dreary-looking great regions that had but lately waved with ancient forests.

Q. Of what do the commissioners of "confiscated estates" in King William's time, speak?

A. They speak of this destruction of the forests, as a grievous loss to the nation.

Q. Who were the destroyers of those forests of Ireland, in William's reign?

A. The new proprietors of confiscated estates.

Q. Why so?

A. Because they were so greedy to seize upon the most trifling profits, that large forests had been cut down, and often sold for a mere trifle, for the sake of getting ready money.

Q. What was the consequence of all this wanton waste?

A. The consequence was such that, in this once well-wooded island, it would have been impossible, even in Dean Swift's time, as he tells us, to find timber either for ship-building or house-building.

Q. Of what calamity does Swift complain?

A. The exorbitant raising of the rent of lands.

Q. What other evil was complained of by the Dean?

A. The prevalence of absenteeism, which carried over to England, according to his estimate, half a million sterling of Irish money per annum, with no return.

Q. What was another evil complained of ?

A. The propensity of proprietors to turn great tracts of land into sheep pastures, which, of course, drove away tenants, increased the wretched competition for farms, and still more increased rents to exorbitant rates.

Q. What must be added to all the above mentioned miseries ?

A. The decay of trade and commerce, caused directly by the jealous and greedy commercial policy of England.

Q. Has this system of English misrule been uniform in Ireland ?

A. So much so, that, the description of it given a century and a half ago, fits with great accuracy and with even heavier aggravations at this day. The absentee rents are now ten times as great in amount, as they were then.

Q. Is the prohibition against exporting woollen cloth still in force ?

A. No ; yet its effect has been perpetuated so thoroughly, that the Irish do not now, as they did then, even manufacture woollen cloth for home consumption.

Q. What did the woollen drapers, clothiers, and weavers of Dublin, lay before parliament in 1723 ?

A. A petition setting forth the decay and almost destruction of their industry, the sore distress and privations of thousands of families that had once

lived comfortably by prosecuting these trades; and asking for inquiry and relief.

Q. Were their grievances remedied ?

A. No; an Irish parliament, absolutely controlled by an English privy council, was quite incapable of applying any remedy.

Q. What was the consequence of this incapacity of parliament ?

A. The affairs of trade had fallen from bad to worse, until at the close of this reign, there was imminent danger of a destructive famine—that scourge which foreign domination has made so familiar to Ireland.

Q. What did Swift write and publish in 1729 ?

A. His “ Modest Proposal ” for relieving the miseries of the people, by cooking and eating the children of the poor—a piece of the fiercest sarcasm, steeped in all the concentrated bitterness of his soul.

Q. What did Sir Robert Walpole, alarmed at the exhibition of popular intelligence, and determination evoked by Swift ?

A. He committed the government of Ireland to his rival Lord Carteret, and appointed to the see of Armagh, Dr. Hugh Boulter bishop of Bristol, one of his own creatures.

Q. When did George the First die ?

A. In 1727.

---

CHAPTER XLVIII.

The Reign of George the Second.

Q. Did the accession of George II, in 1727, occasion any great excitement in Ireland ?

A. No ; it did not lead to any considerable changes either in England or Ireland.

Q. What steps did the Catholics take on the accession of George the Second ?

A. The nobility and gentry determined to present a loyal address to him.

Q. Was their address presented ?

A. No ; it was suppressed by the influence of Boulter, the Protestant primate.

Q. Why was it suppressed ?

A. Because he deemed it inconsistent with the law, that there should be any recognition of the existence of the Irish Catholics as a body in the state.

Q. Was Lord Carteret continued as Lord-Lieutenant of Ireland ?

A. Yes ; but the corrupt and domineering churchman, Primate Boulter, a fit instrument of the odious minister, Sir Robert Walpole, still directed the course of government.

Q. What is said of Boulter as a politician ?

A. This prelate, as a politician, modelled his policy on his patron's, in as much as his contracted sphere, and inferior talents permitted.

Q. To secure a parliamentary majority, what means were made use of by Primate Boulter ?

A. To buy members in market overt, with peerages, or secret-service money, were his chief means of securing a parliamentary majority.

Q. What was his policy ?

A. Being an Englishman by birth and education, and the head of the Protestant establishment in Ireland, his policy was English and Protestant, in every particular.

Q. What was the sole rule of Primate Boulter, during his nearly twenty year's political supremacy in Irish affairs ?

A. To resist, depress, disunite, and defeat the believers in the *dangerous doctrines* of Swift and Molyneux ?

Q. What did those dangerous doctrines teach ?

A. That the people of Ireland ought to be as free a people, as their brethren in England, and therefore should have an independent legislature.

Q. What did Boulter obtain in 1727 ?

A. The disfranchisement of Catholic electors, by a clause cautiously inserted in a bill regulating elections ?

Q. What did he next do ?

A. He laid the foundations of those nurseries of proselytism " the Charter Schools. "

Q. Who succeeded Lord Carteret as viceroy in 1731 ?

A. The Duke of Dorset, who unlike his imme-

mediate predecessor, refrained from suggesting additional severities against the Catholics.

Q. With what was the Duke occupied during his first two year's administration ?

A. He was almost entirely occupied with the fiercest controversy, which had ever waged in Ireland between the Established Church and the Protestant Dissenters.

Q. What was the nature of the dispute ?

A. The Sacramental Test, imposed by law upon the members of both Houses, and all burgesses and councillors of corporate towns.

Q. What was the effect of this law on Presbyterians and other dissenters, when rigidly enforced ?

A. They were as effectually excluded from political and municipal offices, as Catholics themselves.

Q. Did Swift enter into the controversy ?

A. Yes ; and he brought to it not only the zeal of a church-man, but also the prejudices of an Anglo-Irishman against the new-comers in the North.

Q. How does he upbraid those Scotch usurpers in the North ?

A. He upbraids them in 1708, for their parsimony and their clannishness, and as being glad to leave their barren hills of Lochabar for the fruitful vales of Down and Antrim.

Q. What did he deny them ?

A. He denied them, with bitter scorn, the title they had assumed of " Brother Protestants," and as to the Papists, whom they affected to despise,

they were, in his opinion, as much superior to the Dissenters, as a lion, though chained and clipped of its claws, is a stronger and nobler animal than an angry cat, at liberty to fly at the throats of true churchmen.

Q. How did the Presbyterians respond ?

A. By language equally bold, denunciatory, and explicit.

Q. What did they broadly intimate, in a memorial to parliament ?

A. They intimated ; that under the operation of the Test, they would be unable to take up arms again, as they had done in 1688, for the maintenance of the Protestant succession.

Q. What did Swift get up to embarrass them still more ?

A. He got up a paper making out a much stronger case in favor of the Catholics than of " their brethern, the Dissenters."

Q. What was the result ?

A. The controversy closed, for that age, in the complete triumph of the established clergy.

Q. What did this iniquitous deprivation of equal civil rights produce ?

A. It produced the first great Irish exodus to the North American Colonies.

Q. Outraged in their dearest civil and religious rights, what did thousands of the Scoto-Irish of Ulster, and the Milesian and Anglo-Irish of the other provinces, prefer to do ?

A. They preferred to encounter the perils of an Atlantic flitting, rather than abide under the yoke and lash of such an oligarchy.

Q. In the year 1729, how many of those Irish emigrants landed at the port of Philadelphia?

A. Five thousand six hundred ?

Q. In the ten following years what did Ireland furnish ?

A. She furnished to the Carolinas and Georgia, the majority of their emigrants.

Q. Before the end of this reign, what do we see ?

A. Several thousands of heads of families, all bred and married in Ireland, rearing up a free posterity along the slopes of the Blue Ridge in Virginia, and Maryland, and even as far north as the valleys of the Hudson and the St. Lawrence.

Q. What part were their descendants destined to take in the thirteen United Colonies ?

A. They were to repeat for the benefit of George III., the lesson and example their ancestors had taught to James II., at Enniskillen and at Derry.

Q. On the 9th of March, 1731, what was resolved in parliament ?

A. It was " unanimously resolved that, it is the indispensable duty of all magistrates and officers, to put the penal laws against the further growth of Popery in Ireland, into due execution. "

Q. Was Primate Boulter zealous in putting down the " further growth of Popery. "

A. Yes; and none ever pursued it with more diabolical malignity.



Q. What had any Protestant clergyman to do, to win the Primate's favor ?

A. He had but to preach furious and foaming sermons against Papists.

Q. If any pamphleteer desired to make himself conspicuous as a " king's servant," and so gain a profitable situation, what had he to do ?

A. He had only to set to work to prove that all Catholic's are by nature and necessity murderers, perjurers, and adulterers.

Q. What seems to have been the design of Primate Boulter ?

A. To wear down the Catholic population by ill-usage, or force them to fly the country.

Q. Why so ?

A. That the island might lie open to be wholly peopled by English Protestants.

Q. What did inflammatory sermons and equally inflammatory pamphlets diffuse ?

A. They diffused such a spirit of rancor and animosity against Catholics, among their Protestant neighbors, as made the generality of them believe that the words Popery, rebellion, and massacre, really signified the same thing.

Q. What was the effect ?

A. The effect was that the liberties, and sometimes the lives of the Catholics were in imminent danger, from excited Protestants.

Q. What were invented by preachers and pamphlet writers ?

A. The most shocking fables were invented concerning the Irish insurrection in 1641.

Q. What was revived in these sermons and pamphlets ?

A. The English gunpowder treason in 1605, was studiously revived and aggravated, with a degree of virulence and exaggeration, which surpassed the most extravagant fictions of romance or poetry.

Q. What does Doctor Curry affirm ?

A. He affirms that by all these means, the popular passion was so fiercely incensed against Catholics, as to suggest to some Protestants the project of destroying them by massacre, at once.

Q. In 1743, what was formed by some of the inhabitants of Lurgan ?

A. A conspiracy was actually formed to destroy in the night time, in their beds, all their Catholic neighbors.

---

## CHAPTER XLIX.

### Reign of George the Second. (continued.)

Q. How was this inhuman project frustrated ?

A. By an information of the honest Protestant publican, in whose house the conspirators had met, to settle the execution of their scheme.

Q. To whom did the Protestant publican reveal the plot ?

A. To Reverend Mr. Ford, a justice of the peace in that district, before whom he was sworn.

Q. How was this news received by the justice of peace ?

A. With horror, and it was with difficulty he put a stop to the intended massacre.

Q. Who was recalled from the viceroyalty of Ireland in 1737 ?

A. Lord Dorset, and was succeeded by the Duke of Devonshire, a nobleman of great wealth.

Q. What did the Duke keep in Dublin ?

A. A splendid court, and by the expenditures thereby occasioned, made himself extremely popular among the tradesmen of that city.

Q. What did he build in Dublin ?

A. He built Devonshire Quay, at his own expense, and presented it to the city.

Q. On what was the Irish House of Commons chiefly occupied, during Lord Dorset's administration ?

A. On money and financial debates.

Q. Was the latter term of Carteret's administration much disquieted ?

A. It was, on account of an attempt made by the king's servants, to make a grant of £274,000 to the crown.

Q. Was it resisted ?

A. Yes; it was vigorously resisted by the country party.

Q. What then commenced ?

A. A series of acrimonious debates, on momentary affairs, which " the Patriots " treated with a

view to assert the right of the Irish parliament, to control the matter of Irish finances.

Q. What did the Patriots advocate ?

A. Following in the footsteps of their founder (Swift), they advocated Irish rights, in opposition to the Castle party.

Q. In 1729, what did the Castle party attempt ?

A. The Castle party attempted to make it appear that there was a deficit—that in short “ the country owed the government ”—the large sum of £274,000 !

Q. What was the national debt of Ireland in 1733 ?

A. It was £371,312.13, and for the payments of the principal and interest, the supplies were voted from session to session.

Q. What attempt was now made ?

A. A gross attempt was made to grant the supplies, set aside to pay the debt and interest to the king, and his successors for ever.

Q. By whom was this proposition violently resisted ?

A. By the Patriots, who asserted that it was unconstitutional to vote this sum for a longer period than from session to session.

Q. The government being defeated in this attempt, what did it seek ?

A. It sought to grant it for twenty-one years, and a warm debate ensued.

Q. Just as the division was about taking place,

the Ministerialists and Patriots being nearly equal, who entered ?

A. Colonel Tottenham, an Oppositionist, entered.

Q. How was the Colonel dressed ?

A. He was dressed in boots, contrary to the etiquette of the House, which prescribed full dress.

Q. What followed ?

A. The Colonel's vote gave the majority to the Patriots, and the government was defeated by *Tottenham in his boots*, this became one of the toasts of Patriotism, and was giving in all the social meetings.

Q. What did the English government and its crafty chief, Sir Robert Walpole, see ?

A. They saw the necessity of counteracting the perilous doctrines of the " Patriots. "

Q. On what did they resolve ?

A. On the total destruction of the Patriots.

Q. How did they try to accomplish this ?

A. By all the arts of seduction, by the charm of personal popularity, and especially by corruption.

Q. To what pitch had the art of political corruption attained, under Sir Robert Walpole's administration ?

A. It reached, both in England and Ireland a degree of high development, which it had never before attained in any country.

Q. What was the avowed maxim of that crafty Prime minister, Sir Robert Walpole ?

A. "That every man has his price," he saw no reason to except Irish Patriots from that general law.

Q. Whom had he in Ireland willing to do his base work ?

A. Primate Boulter was precisely the man to test its accuracy in practice.

Q. What was now needed on the government side ?

A. All the influence of the government was needed, to overcome the resolved bearing of the Opposition, upon the grand subject of "supplies."

Q. On what were the Patriots determined ?

A. That if the Irish parliament was to be politically subordinate to that of England, they would at least try to maintain its privileges of voting its own money.

Q. In these debates what prominent names do we find among the Patriot party ?

A. We find the names of Sir Edward O'Brien of Clare, and his son Sir Lucius O'Brien, an illustrious name then, both at home and abroad, destined to be more illustrious still before the close of that century, and shine with a yet purer fame, in the present age.

Q. What other renowned men were leading members ?

A. Henry Boyle, Speaker of the House of Commons, afterwards Earl of Shannon, and Anthony

Malone were also leading members of the opposition.

Q. Who was Anthony Malone ?

A. He was the son of Councillor Malone, who had pleaded so earnestly with Sir Toby Butler, against the penal laws of Queen Anne's time, and who afterwards became Chancellor of the Exchequer.

Q. On the death of Dr. Boulter in 1742, who was appointed Protestant Primate to the See of Armagh ?

A. Dr. Hoadley was the first Primate appointed, but he was soon after succeeded by George Stone, bishop of Derry.

Q. What had long been Walpole's policy with regard to Ireland ?

A. To govern that country mainly through the instrumentality of the head of the Established Church, and George Stone was just the man required being one altogether after Walpole's own heart.

Q. What countryman was this George Stone ?

A. He was an Englishman by birth, and the son of a jail-keeper ; he was however, in no wise remarkable for learning.

Q. What was the character of Dr. Stone ?

A. His character was the worst possible, but he had however qualities, which, in the minister's judgment, peculiarly fitted him to hold that wealthy and powerful See.

Q. Had these qualities a moral tendency ?

A. No ; they were, on the contrary, of the basest nature.

Q. How so ?

A. Because he would scruple at no corruption, would revolt at no infamy, to gain adherents "for the court, against the nation."

Q. At what did Primate Stone aim ?

A. To maintain the English interest in Ireland ; and *this* not only by his unjust distribution of the immense patronage of government, but by his still baser acts of seduction.

Q. To what degree of infamy did he stoop, to carry out his infamous designs ?

A. He converted his house, near Dublin, into a brothel, to win the support of the younger members of parliament to his measures by pandering to their vices.

Q. How did the Patriot party hold their difficult position in the legislature ?

A. With great gallantry and ability, notwithstanding the tide of corruption and seduction let loose upon them.

Q. Who was Lord-Lieutenant of Ireland in 1745 ?

A. The celebrated Earl of Chesterfield.

Q. Was he a judicious viceroy ?

A. Yes ; he discouraged informers against "Papists," and conciliated the people of Ireland by mitigating the severities of the then existing laws.

---

## CHAPTER L.

### Reign of George II. (concluded.)

Q. Were there not, however, two new penal laws passed during his viceroyalty ?



A. Yes ; one of these laws dissolved all marriages between Protestants and Catholics.

Q. What did the other inflict ?

A. The penalty of death on every Catholic priest who should marry two Protestants, or a Protestant and a Catholic.

Q. What was Chesterfield's mode of governing ?

A. Mildness and forbearance, by temper and conviction, opposed to persecution ; he connived at Catholic worship under the very walls of the Castle.

Q. How did he encounter the sour and jaundiced bigotry of the local oligarchy ?

A. He encountered them with jest and raillery, so that those zealous magistrates who, had earned distinction by active prosecution of Papists under former viceroys, found only discouragement and rebuke at the Castle under him.

Q. What were chancellors, judges, and sheriffs, made to understand ?

A. That if they would do the king's business aright this time, they would leave, " the common enemy " in peace for the present.

Q. Were there complaints lodged against the Catholics, by the Protestants ?

A. Yes ; but Chesterfield having once satisfied himself that, there was no insurrectionary movement in the country, and none likely to be, was not to be moved from his tolerant course by any complaints or remonstrances.

Q. When some savage ascendant Protestant came to him with tales of alarm, how did he act ?

A. He usually turned the conversation into a tone of light badinage, which perplexed and baffled the man.

Q. What could now be seen in the streets of Dublin ?

A. One might, now and then, see a venerable priest walking in day light, hurrying to perform some rite or service of his holy religion, without fear of informers, of hand-cuffs, and of transportation.

Q. What more could be seen ?

A. Bishops could be seen to cross the sea, and ordain priests and confirm children, without molestation.

Q. What were the Protestants given to understand ?

A. That not even a monk could frighten Lord Chesterfield, who, in fact, had lived for years in France, and respected a monk as much as a rector of the Established Church.

Q. Of what was his lordship made acquainted one day, by one of those narrow-minded bigots ?

A. Of the horrible fact, that, his own coachman was in the habit of going to Mass.

Q. What was his reply to the informer ?

A. " Is it possible ? " cried Chesterfield ; then, I shall take care, the fellow shall not drive me there. "

Q. What startling intelligence was brought to him by a courtier who, burst into his apartment one morning while he was sipping his chocolate in bed ?

A. " That the Papists were rising in Connaught".

Q. What did Chesterfield answer ?

A. " Ah ! " said he, looking at his watch, " 'tis ten o'clock ; time for them to rise. "

Q. What was evident ?

A. There was evidently no tampering with such a viceroy as this who, had judgment enough to see that, the best policy was to leave the Catholics in peace while they remained so.

Q. In what year did Lord Chesterfield leave Ireland ?

A. In 1747.

Q. Who succeeded him in the viceroyalty of Ireland ?

A. Lord Harrington, afterwards Duke of Devonshire.

Q. Whom had Harrington already before him in Ireland ?

A. The celebrated Dr. George Stone, Protestant Archbishop of Armagh, whose life of infamy and political corruption is duly recorded in history

Q. What important legislative measure was contemplated in 1759 ?

A. The Ministers projected a legislative union between Ireland and England.

Q. Did this scheme succeed ?

A. No; it was abandoned for the time.

Q. How did the people of Dublin feel at the design?

A. They were indignant, and rushed into the House of Lords, and compelled such members of both Houses as they met, to take an oath that they never would consent to the destruction of the Irish parliament.

Q. What else did they do?

A. They stopped the carriages of the members, and obliged them to swear opposition to such a measure.

Q. How were some of them handled by the excited crowd?

A. Very roughly; a privy counsellor was thrown into the river, and the Attorney General was wounded and obliged to take refuge in the college.

Q. How did Lord Inchiquin save himself from their fury?

A. As they were abusing him he cried out that his name was O'Brien, when the rage of the people "was turned into acclamations."

Q. What had the Speaker Mr Ponsonby, and the Chief Secretary, Mr. Rigby, to do?

A. They had to appear in the porch of the House of Commons, solemnly to assure the citizens that no union was dreamed of, and if it was proposed, that they would be the first to resist it.

Q. What declaration did Secretary Rigby make in writing, to the elder Pitt?

A. That the public spirit had grown so bold and confident that "the mob" declared, "since they have no chance of numbers in the House, they must have recourse to numbers out of doors."

Q. When did George the Second die ?

A. In 1760.

---

## CHAPTER LI.

### The Reign of George the Third.

Q. In what year did George the Third ascend the throne of England ?

A. In 1760, at the age of twenty-two years.

Q. What change occurred in the constitution of the Irish parliament, at the beginning of this reign ?

A. The limitation of the duration of parliament in 1768.

Q. Previous to this period for how long a term could members sit in parliament ?

A. During life-time, but now the term was limited to eight years.

Q. Was this reform advocated in the preceding reign ?

A. Yes ; but its enactment was reserved for the parliament under the new reign.

Q. Who were returned as members for this parliament ?

A. Several men of great promise, men of a new generation, nurtured in the school of Swift and Malone ; but going even beyond their masters in

their determination, to liberate the legislature of their country, from the undue influence of the Crown and the Castle.

Q. Among those new members who were destined to national celebrity ?

A. Dr. Lucas, Mr. Hussey Burgh, Mr. D. B. Daly, and one destined to universal reputation—Henry Flood.

Q. What is to be remarked of Mr. Henry Flood ?

A. He was only in his 28th year when first elected member for Kilkenny ; but in point of genius and acquirements, he was even then not only the first man in Ireland, but also one of the first in the empire.

Q. Who was at this time Lord-Lieutenant of Ireland ?

A. Lord Townsend.

Q. What dispute arose in 1769, between the Court and House of Commons ?

A. A money bill was prepared in England and submitted to the House of Commons ; but the Commons threw out the bill, because it had not originated with themselves.

Q. Did Lord Townsend protest against the rejection of this bill by the Commons ?

A. He did ; but the House refused to enter his protest on their journals.

Q. What was the consequence ?

A. Townsend, protested in the House of Lords

against their conduct, and ordered the House to be prorogued.

What followed ?

A. Prorogation followed prorogation, till February 1771.

Q. How was this interval occupied by the wily viceroy ?

A. In closeting and coquetting with members of the opposition, in the creation of new places, and the giving of them to the relatives of those capable of being bought.

Q. What is it that seems painful to record ?

A. It is painful to be obliged to record, that his system of personal individual corruption made many proselytes.

Q. Who were won over to the administration ?

A. Many of the Patriots were won over, some by money, and others with honors.

Q. Who among those political apostates, appeared most conspicuous ?

A. Mr. Saxton Perry, member for Limerick, who was elected Speaker of the House, with a promise of peerage.

Q. When the Houses re-assembled, what took place ?

A. The Commons voted a fulsome address of confidence to the Lord-Lieutenant.

Q. Was this slavish address opposed ?

A. Yes ; but it was carried by 132 against 107.

Q. What did Mr. John Ponsonby, the Speaker of the House, refuse.

**A.** He refused to be the official medium of presenting this servile address.

**Q.** How did he act ?

**A.** He resigned at once, requesting the House "to elect another Speaker, who may not think such conduct inconsistent with his honor."

**Q.** Who was elected Speaker ?

**A.** Mr. Perry.—great was the amazement, and indignation of the Hon. Ponsonby, when he saw his friend Mr. Perry consenting to take the post—no longer a post of honor.

**Q.** What did the conduct and speech of Mr. Perry bespeak on this occasion ?

**A.** They bespoke the forward zeal of a new proselyte.

**Q.** How did this session of parliament pass ?

**A.** In an unbroken series of servile divisions, in favor of every thing the Castle wished, against every thing the Castle disliked.

**Q.** What did Lord Townsend soon find out ?

**A.** That the means taken to effect his ends, not less than those ends themselves, aroused the spirit and combined the ranks of the Irish opposition.

**Q.** With what did the press of Dublin teem ?

**A.** It teemed with philippics and satires, upon his creatures, and himself.

**Q.** What were against him ?

**A.** Wit, scholarship, elegant fancy, an irre-



sistible torrent of eloquence, and the popular enthusiasm, all were against him.

Q. What did he now find ?

A. He found the Ireland of his day, very materially altered from the defenceless province, which Stone and Dorset had attempted to cajole and coerce, twenty years before.

Q. What was about drawing to a close ?

A. Townsend's administration was drawing to a close ; he had assuredly performed well his British mission.

Q. How so ?

A. Because no viceroy had yet succeeded in establishing in Ireland, such profound demoralization and debasement.

Q. What did he do in 1772 ?

A. Seeing that he could keep up no longer against the combined forces, he resigned the sword of state into the hands of Lord Harcourt.

Q. How did the new viceroy begin his reign ?

A. By taking an exactly opposite course to his predecessor, but he unfortunately ended it by falling into nearly the same errors and abuses.

Q. What did he suggest ?

A. An absentee-tax, which was introduced by Flood, but rejected through the preponderating influence of the landed aristocracy.

Q. In preparing the tables of expenditures, what did he do ?

A. He caused the arrears amounting to £265,000,

and an annual increase of £100,000 to be added to the estimates.

Q. What discovery was made, which occasioned the greatest indignation ?

A. His supply bill which was discovered at the second reading, to extend over two years, instead of one, occasioned the greatest indignation.

Q. What did Flood do ?

A. He raised his powerful voice, not unmingled with menace, in warning.

Q. What did Burgh, declare ?

A. He declared, that if any member should again bring in such a bill, he would himself move his expulsion from the House.

Q. What did George Ogle, member for Wexford, propose.

A. He proposed that the bill itself should be burned before the porch, by the common hangman.

Q. Of what was he reminded ?

A. He was reminded that the instrument bore the great seal.

Q. What did he answer ?

A. He boldly answered, that the seal would help to make it burn the better. It was not thought politic to take notice of this revolutionary retort.

Q. What took place in 1762, in Waterford, Cork, and other southern counties ?

A. Agrarian riots. The rioters consisted indiscriminately of persons of different persuasions.

---

## CHAPTER LII.

**Rèign of George the Third. (continued.)**

**Q.** What did the Castle party pronounce ?

**A.** They pronounced, at once, that, the cause of the riots was " treason against the state " " another Popish plot."

**Q.** What was accordingly despatched to the South ?

**A.** A large military force, under command of the Marquis of Drogheda.

**Q.** Where did the Marquis fix his head-quarters ?

**A.** At Clogheen, in Tipperary, the parish priest of which was the Rev. Nicholas Sheehy.

**Q.** Who were the magistrates of the county ?

**A.** Sir Thomas Maude, William Bagnel, John Bagwell, Daniel Toler, and Parson Hewitson.

**Q.** Of what were these magistrates the chief maintainers ?

**A.** They were the chief maintainers of the existence of a Popish plot, to bring in the French and the Pretender.

**Q.** Whom had they selected for a victim ?

**A.** Father Sheehy, who was a stern denouncer of their licentious lives, and their exactions of the poor.

**Q.** What charge did they bring against him in 1763 ?

**A.** A charge of high treason, for drilling and enrolling Whiteboys, but he was acquitted.

Q. Towards the close of the same year, what charge did they bring against him.

A. A charge of murder.

Q. Who were the witnesses against him ?

A. A prostitute, named Dunlea, a vagrant lad, named Lonergan, and a convicted horse stealer, called Toohey, were the respectable witnesses produced against his Reverence.

Q. What was Father Sheehy's fate ?

A. After he had lain a year in prison, heavily fettered, on the 12th of March, 1765, he was tried at Clonmel, on this evidence ; and notwithstanding his innocence being proved, he was condemned, and beheaded on the third day afterwards.

Q. Who were executed two months later, on a similar charge, and upon the same testimony ?

A. Edward Sheehy, his cousin, and two respectable young farmers named, Buxton and Farrell. All died with religious firmness and composure.

Q. What was the fate of their enemies ?

A. The fate of their enemies is notorious ; with a single exception, they met with violent, loathsome, and terrible deaths.

Q. Give the historical record of their deaths ?

A. Maude died insane, Bagwell in idiocy, one of the jury committed suicide, another was found dead in a privy, a third was killed by his horse, a fourth was drowned, a fifth shot, and so through the entire list.

Q. What was the end of the three witnesses ?

A. Toohey was hanged for felony, the prostitute Dunlea fell into a cellar and was killed, and the lad Lonergan died of a loathsome disease in a Dublin infirmary.

Q. What did the Munster oligarchy attempt in 1767 ?

A. To revive the plot, but without success.

Q. Who was arrested ?

A. Dr. McKenna, bishop of Cloyne, was arrested, but afterwards acquitted.

Q. What other gentlemen were taken into custody ?

A. Mr. Nagle of Garnaville, ( a relative of Edmund Burke), Mr. Keating, and several respectable Catholic gentlemen were arrested.

Q. With what did the Castle party charge Edmund Burke ?

A. With having "sent his brother Richard, recorder of Bristol, and Mr. Nagle, a relation, on a mission to Munster, to levy money on the Catholic body, for the use of the Whiteboys, who were exclusively Papists'."

Q. What was certain ?

A. It was certain, that Burke did originate a subscription, for the defence of the second batch of victims, who through his and other exertions, were fortunately saved from the fate of their predecessors.

Q. What secret oath-bound associations were contemporaneous with the Whiteboys ?

A. The Northern agrarians, called "Hearts of Steel," formed among the absentee Lord Downshire's tenants, in 1762; the "Oak Boys," so called from wearing oak leaves in their hats; and the "Peep-of-Day Boys," the precursors of the Orange Association.

Q. Why were the Peep-of-Day Boys so called?

A. Because of their dastardly custom of repairing at that hour to the houses of Catholics, dragging them out of their beds, and otherwise maltreating them.

Q. What does Sir Richard Mnsgrave, the furious Protestant partisan, say of this banditti?

A. "They visited, says he, the houses of the Catholics at a very early hour in the morning, to search for arms, and in doing so they often committed the most wanton outrages, insulting their persons, breaking their furniture," etc.

Q. As the Catholics of Armagh could not endure such treatment, what did they form?

A. They formed a counter-association, which they called by a name quite as descriptive as the other, "The Defenders."

Q. What was the result?

A. The result was, that many bloody encounters took place between the two parties, which ended in the religious war of a whole district.

Q. Under what other name did the Peep-of-Day Boys go?

A. They were also called " Protestant Boys," and in some districts " Wreckers."

Q. Into what did the association of these plundering banditti, afterwards develop itself?

A. Into the too famous organization of " Orangemen."

Q. In 1791, what society was organized in Dublin.

A. The celebrated society of United Irishmen, which in its origin, was mainly a Protestant organization.

Q. What was the leading object of this association?

A. A pure and disinterested love of liberty; it was formed for the purpose of forwarding a brotherhood of affection, among Irishmen of every religious persuasion, and thereby to obtain a complete reform in the legislature, founded on principles of civil, political, and religious liberty.

Q. What were their avowed objects of pursuit?

A. Catholic Emancipation, and parliamentary reform.

Q. What was understood by these?

A. By the former was understood, a total abolition of all political distinctions between Catholics and Protestants; by the latter, they meant to exclude the borough representation from the House of Commons.

Q. In what year was the American " Stamp Act" passed?

A. In 1765.

Q. What did the Americans declare ?

A. They declared there should be " No taxation without representation."

Q. What did the people of Boston do in 1773 ?

A. They emptied a cargo of taxed tea into the harbor of that port.

Q. What celebrated Irishman spoke in the British parliament against this tax ?

A. Edmund Burke who made one of his most celebrated speeches, in favor of the repeal of the tea-duty.

Q. In what year did the American Colonies revolt from England ?

A. In 1776.

Q. What effect had the Declaration of American Independence, on the Irish people ?

A. It stimulated them, by example, to assert the freedom of their trade, and the independence of their parliament.

Q. Did it furnish them with any facilities for this purpose ?

A. Yes ; it did.

Q. How ?

A. By embarrassing England, which was then engaged in a war against the American States, and could not spare troops to overcome the Irish.

Q. Which period is looked upon as the most favorable to Irish independence ?

A. The period of England's difficulty and distress.



“ England’s embarrassment has always been Ireland’s opportunity.”

Q. Did there not exist strong analogies between the American Colonies and Ireland ?

A. Yes ; and that occasioned in the latter country, not only an intense interest, but, also, a deep sympathy with the American struggle.

Q. What wise instructions did the Lord-Lieutenant receive from the government, at this critical juncture ?

A. To endeavor by all means to soothe and engage the affections of the Catholics of Ireland.

Q. How was this to be done ?

A. By the gradual relaxations of the rigorous code of penalties, pains, and disabilities, under which they had so long and so patiently suffered.

Q. What bill was brought up in parliament in 1773.

A. A bill to secure the payment of money that, should be really lent and advanced by Catholics to Protestants, on mortgages of lands, tenements, and hereditaments.

Q. What other bill was brought up shortly afterwards ?

A. A bill to enable Catholics under certain terms and provisoes, to take leases of lives, of lands, tenements and hereditaments ; but neither one nor the other of these bills was passed.

Q. What paltry measure of relief was accorded to the Catholics in 1774 ?

A. A permission of expressing their allegiance to their sovereign, which before they had not.

---

### CHAPTER LIII.

#### The Irish Volunteers.

Q. What did the Irish parliament pass in 1771?

A. A militia bill, to authorize the formation of volunteer forces for the defence of the country, which was then threatened with a French invasion.

Q. What was freely discussed at the Castle, for some months after the passage of the bill?

A. It was freely discussed whether this volunteer force was to be a regular militia one, subject to martial law, or composed of independent companies.

Q. What was the final decision given?

A. In favor of volunteer companies, to be supplied with arms by the state; but to be drilled and clothed at their own expense: they were empowered to elect their own officers.

Q. What was the effect of this official announcement?

A. It caused the organization to spread rapidly over the whole kingdom.

Q. Where did the enrolment of this citizen-army originate?

A. In Belfast. The people of that town had requested the government to send them a garrison.

Q. What was the answer of the government?

A. That they could not spare more than half a troop of dismounted cavalry, and half a company of invalids.

Q. When the Belfast Volunteers formed themselves into a corps, for the national defence, was their example speedily followed by the other towns throughout the kingdom.

A. Yes; and so speedily, that within a few months the volunteer army of Ireland amounted to 42,000 strong.

Q. In 1779, what did the Irish Volunteers become?

A. They became in reality a national army for domestic protection and defence.

Q. What were the Irish Volunteers at first?

A. A Protestant organization exclusively, but by degrees they opened their ranks to the Catholics.

Q. Of what color were their uniforms?

A. They were various, and of all the colors of the rainbow. The uniform of the Lawyer's corps, was scarlet and blue, and that of the Attorney's scarlet and green.

Q. What did the corps, called the Irish Brigade, composed principally of Catholics, wear?

A. They wore scarlet, faced with green, whilst the Goldsmith's corps, wore blue, faced with scarlet, and a professional profusion of gold lace.

Q. Whom did this democratic army select, to rule their councils and direct their power?

A. Flood, Grattan, Charlemont and Leinster—

the chosen men in all the liberal professions—the orators who led the Patriot party, in the House of Commons—men of lofty characters and great genius, these were the officers who held unpurchased honors in the Volunteers.

Q. What occurred in the summer of 1799, which greatly stimulated the volunteering spirit ?

A. The combined fleets of France and Spain entered the Channel in overwhelming force, which the British dared not venture to encounter.

Q. Was this a fortunate incident for the volunteers ?

A. Yes; for the purpose of establishing their fidelity to the original principle of their body, which was principally the defence of the country against a foreign enemy.

Q. What did most of the volunteers know ?

A. They knew well that their only foreign enemy was England, and that France, Spain, and America would have been most happy to deliver them from that enemy.

Q. What else did they know ?

A. They knew, also, that the only use of the volunteer force in practice, was likely to be the wresting of their national independence from England.

Q. What effect had this on the Irish Nation ?

A. The pulse of the Irish nation, torpid through habitual oppression, began to trob; her blood, stimulated by the stings of injustice, which she

had so long and so patiently endured, circulated with a new rapidity.

Q. What was the effect ?

A. Her heart reanimated, sent motion and energy through her whole frame ; and from a cold and almost lifeless corse, Ireland was seen majestically arising from the tomb of obscurity, and paying the first tribute of her devotion, at the shrine of liberty.

Q. Roused to a sense of her miserable situation, on what did she cast her eyes ?

A. She cast her eyes around on the Independent States of Europe, and compared their strength, their capacity, and resources with her own.

Q. Encouraged by the view of her comparative superiority, what did she perceive ?

A. She perceived that she had strength and means, and likewise a good opportunity to redress herself, from the wrongs and degradations she was suffering.

Q. Of what was she aware ?

A. That so long as she tolerated the authority of the British legislation over her concerns, so long her commerce, her constitution, and her liberties, must lie prostrate at the foot of every British minister.

Q. What was now opened ?

A. A new and broad field of reflection was opened to the middle orders ; and all ranks began

to discuss the most decisive means of redressing their grievances.

Q. What circumstances were highly propitious at this time, to the political emancipation of Ireland ?

A. England's difficulty with America, and the disturbances on the Continent.

Q. What now appeared to collect over the head of Great Britain.

A. A dark cloud: the rays of her setting sun could scarcely penetrate the obscurity of the gloom which surrounded her; and though she faced the impending hurricane with magnanimity and perseverance, she experienced a most anxious solicitude at the awful crisis, which was rapidly approaching her.

Q. What was her situation ?

A. It was terrific; the States of America colonized by her industry, and peopled by her convicts, tearing themselves away from the mother country; and appealing to the whole world against the tyranny, which at once had caused and justified her disobedience.

Q. What did the Irish people feel ?

A. They felt that they had a double duty to perform to themselves, and to their posterity.

Q. What did they perceive ?

A. That the moment most favorable to their object had arrived; which, if suffered to pass by without effort, might never recur.

Q. How did affairs stand ?

A. Affairs now approached fast to a crisis ; the freedom of commerce being the subject most familiar and comprehensible to the ideas of the people, received their first attention.

Q. What became the watchword of the Volunteers, and at the same time, the National cry ?

A. Free trade.

Q. How did the Dublin Volunteer Artillery appear on parade ?

A. They appeared, commanded by James Napper Tandy, with labels on the mouths of their cannon, " Free Trade or Speedy Revolution. "

Q. What were now posted all over the city ?

A. In every part of the city placards were posted to the same effect.

Q. What was the effect on the British minister ?

A. He became alarmed, and trembled for the consequences of his political intolerance.

Q. On what did the British Cabinet at length resolve ?

A. That something must be done to tranquilize Ireland. The king was informed of their determination, and was prevailed upon to accede to it.

Q. What had his Majesty already received ?

A. A severe shock, by the unexpected events of the American contest, and the additional mortification of compulsory concessions to Ireland, was little calculated to tranquilize his feelings.

Q. What was, nevertheless, required from his Majesty ?

A. His acquiescence to Ireland's demands.

Q. What did the Executive Power of Great Britain, finally adopt ?

A. Means, if not altogether to satisfy, at least to conciliate, and concede considerably to Ireland's demands.

Q. On the 24th of November, 1782, what did his Majesty proclaim from the throne ?

A. His first substantial act of grace to the Irish nation, and he also called the attention of parliament to the situation of that country.

Q. What did the people of Ireland determine to establish ?

A. The independence of the Irish legislature, beyond the power of British re-assumption.

Q. Did this spirit of independence and determination, spread universally amongst the people ?

A. Yes ; and the cry of " Free Trade " was now accompanied by that of " Free Parliament. "

Q. What was the effect ?

A. That patriotic enthusiasm which had so effectually asserted the commerce of Ireland, now arose with double vigor to assert its constitution.

Q. What was taking place in the Volunteer army ?

A. It was rapidly advancing in discipline and numbers, and at that period amounted to above 80,000 soldiers, ready for actual service.



Q. What was now the dilemma of the Minister ?

A. It was most difficult and distressing.

Q. How so ?

A. Because any effort to seduce the Volunteers, would but excite, any attempt to dupe them, would but inflame, and to resist them, would be impossible.

Q. Distracted, therefore, by every species of embarrassment, what did he suffer ?

A. He suffered the Irish nation to pursue its course without direct opposition, and trusted to the chance of events for the preservation of the empire.

Q. How did the career of independence proceed ?

A. With irresistible impetuosity ; a general feeling arose that a crisis was fast approaching, when the true principles of the Irish constitution must be decisively determined.

Q. What was now cementing among the Irish people ?

A. A general union of all sects seemed to be cementing. the animosity of ages was sinking into oblivion, and it was reserved for the incendiaries of a later period, to revive that barbarous sectarian discord.

Q. What is to be remarked of this sectarian weapon of discord ?

A. Without this " sectarian weapon, " the British government would have ever found Ireland

too proud for the influence of power, and too strong for the grasp of annexation.

Q. In what year was *free trade* carried by the Irish legislature ?

A. In 1779.

Q. What was the celebrated resolution of the Dublin Volunteers, presided over by the Duke of Leinster, in 1780 ?

A. "*Resolved*—That the King, Lords, and Commons of Ireland, only are competent to make laws binding the subjects of this realm ; and that they would not obey, nor give operation to any laws, save only those enacted by the King, Lords, and Commons of Ireland, whose rights and privileges, jointly and severally, they were determined to support with their lives and fortunes."

Q. At a meeting of the Corps of Independent Dublin Volunteers, March, 1782, what resolutions were passed ?

A. "*Resolved*—That we will, in every capacity, oppose the execution of any statute, imposed upon us by the pretended authority of a British parliament. "

Q. Were there no others passed at this time ?

A. Yes ; more than 200 resolutions to the same effect (many stronger) were quickly published, by corps and regiments of volunteers throughout Ireland.

Q. Who were the principal leaders of the movement in favor of free trade, and a free parliament for Ireland.

Q. Henry Grattan, the Duke of Leinster, the Earl of Charlemont, Henry Flood, and several others.

Q. What did Grattan move and carry through the House of Commons in 1782 ?

A. A declaration of rights exactly identical in matter, and nearly so in words, with the resolution of the Dublin Volunteers, already quoted.

---

#### CHAPTER LIV.

##### The Volunteer Convention at Dungannon.

Q. Where and when did the Volunteer convention meet ?

A. At Dungannon, in February, 1782; and the bold and determined tone adopted by that body, encouraged the Patriots in parliament, and overawed the Court party into acquiescence.

Q. Were the deliberations of the Dungannon meeting continued for a long time ?

A. They were continued during several days, without interruption or intermission.

Q. What was the character of its discussions and resolutions ?

A. Its discussions were calm and dignified; its resolutions firm, moderate and patriotic.

Q. At length, on the 15th of February, 1782, what did this assembly frame ?

A. The celebrated declaration of rights and of

grievances, under which the Irish nation had so long been languishing.

Q. What did it announce to the world ?

A. The substantial causes by which the commerce of Ireland had been so long restrained, and every trace of a free constitution almost obliterated.

Q. Mention one of the principal resolutions passed at this celebrated assembly ?

A. "*Resolved*—That as men, and as Irishmen, as Christians and as Protestants, we rejoice in the relaxation of the penal laws against our Roman Catholic fellow-subjects, and that we conceive the measure to be fraught with happiest consequences to the union, and to the prosperity of the inhabitants of Ireland."

Q. How did the parliament testify its gratitude to Grattan for his triumphant exertions, to obtain legislative independence, in Ireland.

A. The House of Commons voted him a grant of £50,000.

Q. What was the next money vote of the Irish Commons ?

A. They voted £100,000 to raise seamen for the service of England, thus giving a proof of the readiness of Ireland to assist the sister country, when exempt from the operation of British injustice.

Q. Of what religion were the leaders of the glorious movement of 1772-82 ?

A. They were Protestants ; some of them descendants of the Cromwellian settlers.

**Q.** What does their conduct demonstrate ?

**A.** That the Protestant heart can warm to the cause of Irish freedom and prosperity, when uninfluenced by the visionary fears conjured up by designing bigots.

**Q.** What was the result of the commercial and constitutional victory obtained by the Patriots ?

**A.** Increase of trade, manufacture, and general prosperity to an extent unparalleled in the annals of any other nation, within so short a period.

**Q.** Did the Catholics obtain any relaxation of their grievances ?

**A.** Yes ; in 1782 the penal laws regarding property were repealed, and the Catholics were placed on a level with Protestants, as far as, regarded the acquisition of land in freehold, or in absolute fee.

**Q.** What great fault existed in the constitution of the Irish parliament ?

**A.** The great number of small boroughs, which were under the absolute influence of private individuals, and entirely beyond the control of the people.

**Q.** Were the members of these boroughs numerous ?

**A.** They composed fully two-thirds of the House, and these were nominated at the dictation of their several patrons.

**Q.** In what were these borough-members defective ?

A. They were necessarily more liable to be corrupted by the Court, than genuine representatives of the people would have been.

Q. Were there any efforts made to procure a reform of the parliament ?

A. Yes ; in 1783, Mr. Flood introduced a bill for that purpose into the Commons.

Q. Did the bill pass ?

A. No ; it was rejected through a copious application of Court influence.

Q. What grant did the Irish House of Commons make in 1785 ?

A. A grant of £140,000, to the British minister on the faith of his conceding to Ireland, certain commercial advantages, known as the "Eleven Propositions."

Q. What act of English perfidy was exhibited on this occasion ?

A. The minister took the money, but instead of conceding the "Eleven Propositions" he introduced a code of "Twenty Propositions," injurious to Irish commerce, which had been suggested by the leading merchants.

Q. What was the fate of the twenty English propositions ?

A. They encountered a powerful resistance in the Irish House of Commons.

Q. What did the Court do ?

A. The Court withdrew the obnoxious measure,

and the people exhibited their delight by extraordinary rejoicings, and illuminations.

Q. What remarkable event occurred in 1789?

A. King George the Third, who never had much mind, this year lost the little he had, and was pronounced insane by the Court physicians.

Q. What question then arose?

A. The question of the Regency.

Q. In what did the British and Irish parliaments concur?

A. In appointing the Prince of Wales, who was then twenty-six years of age, Regent during his Majesty's incapacity.

Q. What did the British parliament do?

A. The British parliament fettered the Regent in the exercise of the royal authority, but the Irish legislature invested him with unlimited powers.

Q. Did the king recover?

A. Yes; he however, unexpectedly recovered, and resumed the exercise of the executive functions.

Q. How did successive administrations in Ireland thence-forward employ themselves?

A. In augmented efforts to corrupt the members of the Irish legislature.

Q. To what cause do you attribute the amount of success, that attended those efforts of corruption?

A. To the fact that the Irish parliament was un-

reformed.—that it was not sufficiently under the wholesome control of the people.

Q. In what year was the elective franchise conceded to the Catholics ?

A. In 1793.

---

## CHAPTER LV.

### Fitzwilliam's Administration—Grattan's Leadership.

Q. Who was sent to Ireland as Lord-Lieutenant in 1795 ?

A. Lord Fitzwilliam.

Q. Was the new viceroy propitious to the Catholics ?

A. Yes ; and his appointment gave great hope and satisfaction to the Irish Catholics, and their friends in parliament.

Q. Of what was he in favor ?

A. Complete Catholic Emancipation.

Q. With whom had Fitzwilliam an interview, before he came over to Ireland as a viceroy ?

A. With Henry Grattan the celebrated Irish orator and patriot.

Q. What was the purport of this interview ?

A. To confer with him on the policy to be pursued in Ireland.

Q. What was Grattan's main and indispensable point ?

A. The complete Emancipation of the Catholics



Q. When did Lord Fitzwilliam take possession of his government ?

A. On the 4th of January, 1795. Parliament stood prorogued, until the 22d of January.

Q. How did he occupy the intervening time ?

A. In making some dismissals, from office, which created great dismay and resentment in the Castle circles, and proportional joy in the minds of the people.

Q. What was Henry Grattan invited to accept ?

A. The post of Chancellor of the Exchequer, but he declined.

Q. What is it that now surprised the people, but was, at the same time to them, a cause of great joy ?

A. The dismissal of Mr. Beresford from the Revenue Board.

Q. Who was Mr. Beresford ?

A. He was at that time the most powerful peer in Ireland, commanding such controlling influence, that it was thought no viceroy could dare to displace him.

Q. What did this bold step, as it was then felt to be, confirm ?

A. The joyful expectation that, an ample Catholic Relief bill would be brought in, and sustained by the government.

Q. Who were highly pleased at the prospect ?

A. All the Catholics and liberal Protestants were highly pleased at the prospect.

Q. What did the *Northern Star*, organ of the United Irishmen, published in Belfast, announce ?

A. It announced Catholic Emancipation as a matter settled.

Q. On what did the Catholics generally agree ?

A. To put their case into the hands of Henry Grattan, their old and well tried advocate.

Q. When the parliament met, what did Grattan assume ?

A. The leadership of the House of Commons.

Q. What did he introduce ?

A. He immediately introduced a bill granting the Catholics complete Emancipation—rendering them eligible to office, even to the office of Chancellor.

Q. Who raised their voices against Grattan ?

A. The oligarchy now raised the old cry "the Protestant Church in danger."

Q. How did the oligarchy proceed ?

A. They sent delegations to London, and every agency of influence was brought to bear, on the king and the English Cabinet.

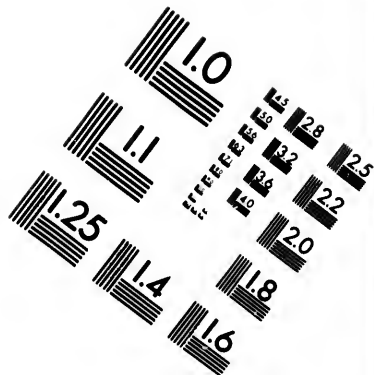
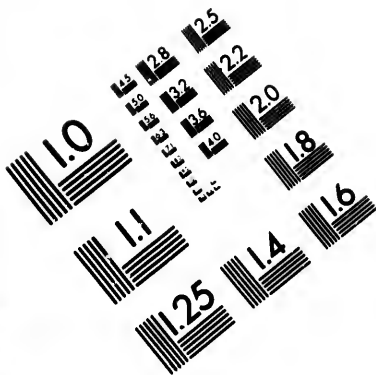
Q. What did Mr. Beresford, the dismissed Commissioner of the Revenue do ?

A. He at once went to England, laid his complaints before Mr. Pitt, Prime Minister, and even had an audience of the king.

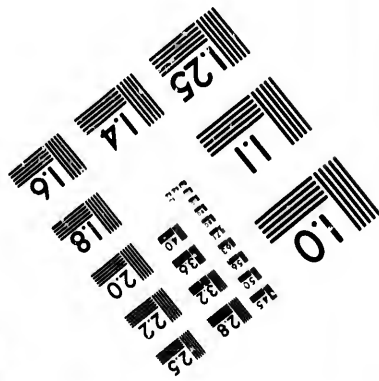
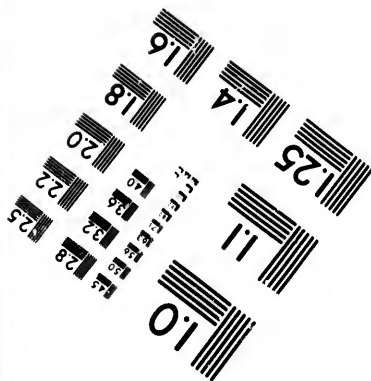
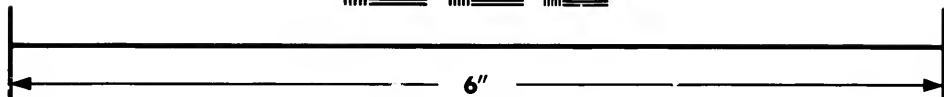
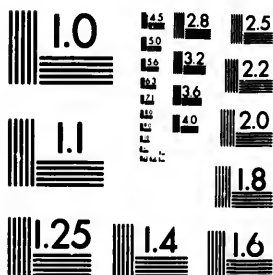
Q. What did Lord Fitzwilliam soon find out ?

A. From the tenor of the letters he received from





**IMAGE EVALUATION  
TEST TARGET (MT-3)**



**Photographic  
Sciences  
Corporation**

23 WEST MAIN STREET  
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580  
(716) 872-4503

10  
E 28  
E 32  
E 36  
E 22  
E 20  
E 18  
E 16

11  
10  
7.5  
5  
2

Pitt, he learned that the Minister was dissatisfied with some of his measures.

Q. What did Fitzwilliam feel ?

A. He felt bound in honor to tell Mr. Pitt, that he might choose between him and the Beresfords.

Q. Did Pitt choose ?

A. He did,—but not till the Irish parliament, in the exuberance of its confidence and gratitude, had voted the extraordinary subsidy of 20,000 men for the navy, and £1,800,000, towards the expense of the war with France.

Q. What then took place ?

A. The popular viceroy was recalled amid the universal regrets of the people.

Q. On what day did Lord Fitzwilliam take his departure from Ireland ?

A. On the 25th of March, 1795.

Q. How is the day of his departure described ?

A. As a day of general gloom, the stores were shut, no business of any kind was transacted, and the whole city was in mourning.

Q. In what other way did the people testify their respect and gratitude, for their beloved and truly patriotic Governor ?

A. His coach was drawn to the water side by some of the most respectable citizens, and a cordial sorrow appeared on every countenance.

Q. How long did Lord Fitzwilliam govern Ireland ?

A. Three months. The history of these three months—of this short-lived attempt to govern Ireland on the advice of Grattan—is full of instruction.

Q. Was the wise and impartial administration of Fitzwilliam productive of good results ?

A. Yes ; for at no subsequent period, to the present day, were the two nations which make up the Irish population, so well disposed to amalgamate and unite. There appeared at this moment a favorable disposition to bury the hatchet of strife.

Q. Did this state of Irish union suit the exigencies of British policy ?

A. No ; there should be an insurrection, in order that there might be a Legislative Union.

Q. By what was British policy aided, in this same eventful year of 1795 ?

A. It was materially aided by a new and portentous institution,—the Orange Society.

Q. What now tended greatly to increase the ranks of the United Irish Society ?

A. The recall of Lord Fitzwilliam, and the absolute and more inevitable despair of obtaining either Reform of parliament, or Catholic Emancipation, under the existing order of things, had driven vast numbers of the people of both religions into its ranks.

Q. What was now fast cementing among the Catholics and Protestants ?

A. The spirit of union and fraternity.

Q. Who replaced lord Fitzwilliam as governor of Ireland?

A. Lord Camden, whose viceroyalty extended into the middle of the year 1798: a reign which embraced all that remains to us to narrate, of the Parliamentary politics of the *Era* of Independence.

Q. When the sittings of parliament were resumed during April, May, and June, was the Emancipation Bill brought up?

A. Yes; but it was rejected by three to one—155  
55.

Q. In what spirit were the debates now conducted?

A. The debates were now marked with a most violent anti-Catholic spirit.

Q. To what did these anti-Catholic debates tend?

A. To inflame still more the exasperated feeling which already prevailed in the country, between the Orangemen and the Defenders.

---

## CHAPTER LVI.

### Coercion and Anarchy.

Q. What did the anti-Catholic party do?

A. They sent active agents down to Armagh, to turn the ferocity and fanaticism of the Peep-of-Day Boys into a religious contest with the Catholics.



under the specious appearance of zeal for church and king.

Q. What was the result ?

A. Personal animosity was artfully converted into religious rancor.

Q. To what was the appellation of the Peep-of-Day Boys now changed ?

A. It was changed into that of Orangemen. It was in the northern part of Armagh county that this shocking association originated, and Mr. Thomas Verner enjoyed the *high honor* of being its first "Grand Master."

Q. What was the form of their test oath ?

A. "In the awful presence of Almighty God. I, A. B ; do solemnly swear, that I will, to the utmost of my power support the king and the present government ; and I do further swear that, I will use my utmost exertions to exterminate all the Catholics of the kingdom of Ireland."

Q. Where do we find the Orange oath given in the above terms ?

A. In a pamphlet published in 1797, called "A view of the present state of Ireland."

Q. But whatever may have been the original form of engagement, or however it may have since been changed by other politic "Grand Masters," what is certain ?

A. Nothing is more certain than that the Orange Society, did immediately, and most seriously apply

themselves to the task of exterminating the Catholics.

Q. What is a historical fact ?

A. That the government encouraged this terrible society to keep alive religious animosity, and prevent the spread of the United Irish organization.

Q. What would a union of Irishmen, organized upon just, liberal and fraternal basis, have rendered impossible at this time ?

A. The Union of Ireland with England, on which Mr. Pitt had set his heart.

Q. What was now the chief object of the government and its agents ?

A. To invent and disseminate fearful rumors of intended massacres, of the whole Protestant population, by the Catholics.

Q. What does Dr. Madden tell us ?

A. That the government and its agents made every effort to infuse into the mind of the Protestant, feelings of distrust in his Catholic fellow-countrymen.

Q. What were soon apparent ?

A. The effects of this distrust were soon apparent, in the atrocities committed by the Orangemen in Armagh, and by the magistrates and military in the other counties.

Q. Did the Catholics defend themselves ?

A. Yes; the persecuted "Defenders" of Armagh, made some feeble attempts to protect themselves, though nearly all without arms.

**Q.** To what did this resistance lead ?

**A.** It led to the so-called " Battle of the Diamond," near the village of that name, on the 21st of September, 1795.

**Q.** What is said of that skirmish, as nothing can be more absurd than to term the affair a battle ?

**A.** It is said that four or five of the Defenders were killed, and a proportionate number wounded, but not one of the Orange party was killed or wounded.

**Q.** Do the Orangemen perpetuate the remembrance of this great battle.

**A.** Yes; and this is the glorious battle that has been toasted at Orange banquets, from that day to this.

**Q.** What was commenced now by the Orangemen ?

**A.** The Orangemen now commenced a persecution of the blackest dye. They were fully resolved not to tolerate, even the existence of one Roman Catholic in the country.

**Q.** What did the Orangemen post upon the houses of their unfortunate victims ?

**A.** They posted this pithy notice, " To Hell or Connaught."

**Q.** What was appointed by this Satanic Association ?

**A.** A limited time in which the necessary removal of persons and property, was to be made.

**Q.** If after the expiration of that period, the con-

ditions of the notice were not complied with, what was done ?

A. Then, the brave Orangemen assembled, destroyed the furniture, burned the habitations, and forced the ruined families to fly elsewhere for shelter.

Q. Did the Orangemen confine themselves to the mere forcible ejection of their enemies ?

A. No ; for many murders were committed on the unresisting people.

Q. What is it, which, perhaps, gives the clearest idea of this persecution ?

A. The fact that it was estimated the next year (1796) that, seven thousand persons were either killed or driven from their homes, in Armagh county alone.

Q. What was the fate of those families driven from their homes, by those cruel Orange banditti ?

A. Having no shelter to fly to, in most cases they could only wander o'er the mountains until either death relieved them, or they were arrested and imprisoned.

Q. How were the Orange magistrates employed ?

A. Aided by the troops, they were arresting and imprisoning without any charge, multitudes of unoffending people all over the country, under one pretext or another.

Q. When did parliament assemble ?

A. In the midst of these painful scenes, parliament assembled on the 21st of January, 1796.

Q. On what did Lord Camden, in his speech from the throne, congratulate them ?

A. On the "brilliant success of the Austrian armies upon the Rhine," and then alluding to dangerous secret Societies, he intimated that certain additional powers would be called for, in other words, *martial law*.

Q. In 1796, what did the United Irishmen resolve ?

A. Hopeless of parliamentary relief, they overcome their repugnance to foreign aid, and resolved to solicit assistance of France.

Q. Who were sent to negotiate a treaty ?

A. Theobald Wolfe Tone, Lord Edward Fitzgerald, and Arthur O'Connor, were sent over to negotiate a treaty, between the French Republic and Ireland.

Q. What armament sailed for Ireland ?

A. An armament carrying 15,000 men, with a considerable amount of arms and military stores, sailed for Ireland from France.

Q. What happened to the fleet ?

A. The fleet was dispersed by a violent storm, and only a few vessels arrived in Bantry Bay.

Q. What became the policy of the government ?

A. To goad the people by torture into a premature insurrection, before the organization of their plans could be completed.

Q. What was proclaimed ?

A. Martial law was proclaimed in several coun-

ties; and a savage soldiery were encouraged to emulate each other in acts of cruelty.

Q. What was the consequence of this?

A. The tortures of whipping, half-hanging, and the pitch-cap, were put into active operation.

Q. What were burned?

A. The humble dwellings of the peasantry were burned.

Q. Who were tortured and outraged?

A. Their sons were tortured or slain, and their daughters were subjected to all the outrages of brutal passion.

Q. At the same time what was held out?

A. The most liberal rewards were held out to informers.

Q. What followed in consequence of this?

A. The government soon became acquainted with all the proceedings of the United Irishmen, and most of the active leaders were arrested.

---

## CHAPTER LVII.

### The Insurrection of 1798.

Q. Who were arrested in February 1798, on their way to France?

A. Arthur O'Connor, Father Quigley, and the brothers John and Benjamin Binns.

Q. What newspaper was suppressed in the same year?

A. On the 6th of March, *the Press*, the Dublin organ of the party, was seized by government.

Q. Who were arrested on the 12th of March on the information of the traitor, Thomas Reynolds ?

A. The Leinster delegates, thirteen in number, were seized in conclave with all their papers, at the house of Oliver Bond, in Bridge Street, Dublin.

Q. What other gentlemen were arrested on the same information ?

A. Addis Emmet and Dr. McNevin who were taken in their own houses, and William Sampson, who was arrested in the north of England.

Q. Had these arrests any bad effect on the Irish cause in France ?

A. Yes; this news reaching France was as Tone notes in his journal, "a terrible blow," to the Irish cause there.

Q. What did the remaining members of the Irish Directory, still contrive to hold ?

A. They contrived to hold correspondence with each other, and to meet in secret after the arrests at Bond's.

Q. Who were appointed to fill up the vacancies in the Executive ?

A. John and Henry Sheares both lawyers, sons of a wealthy Cork Banker, and Mr. Lawless, a surgeon.

Q. With whom did these gentlemen act in concert ?

A. With Lord Edward Fitzgerald, who remained

undetected, notwithstanding all the efforts of the government to seize him, from the 12th of March, till the 19th of May following.

Q. During those two months how did the new directors employ themselves ?

A. They devoted themselves with the utmost energy and promptitude in the equipping of the people, and especially in making proselytes among the militia.

Q. With whom did the brothers Sheares come in contact, while executing their plans ?

A. With Captain John Armstrong, an officer of the Kildare militia.

Q. What did Armstrong undertake ?

A. To act as a spy upon the brothers John and Henry Sheares.

Q. Under whose instructions did he thus act ?

A. Under the instructions of Lord Castlereagh.

Q. What did he do to carry out his traitorous design ?

A. He gained access to the confidence, and even intimacy of the Sheares, not only by his agreeable social qualities ; but also by his pretended zeal in the cause to which they were devoted.

Q. What did he next do ?

A. He dined with them at their house in Baggot street, echoed their opinions, and thus led the credulous brothers on to their destruction.

Q. On what day did Armstrong make his last visit to the Sheares ?



A. On Sunday, the 20th of May, 1798, and shared the hospitality of his victims. This was the last time the cloven foot of treachery passed the threshold of the Sheares. On the following morning they were arrested.

Q. What must be remarked of the terrible iniquity of Armstrong's conduct, with regard to the Sheares?

A. It is unparalleled for its Judas-like perfidy. He dined with them on that memorable Sunday, sat in social intercourse with their families, well aware that in a few hours his treachery would bring ruin on that household.

Q. When did Armstrong die?

A. The traitor, after having hanged his hospitable entertainers of Baggot street, lived to a good old age. He died in 1858.

Q. What did Captain Armstrong say in his interview with Dr. Madden?

A. That he was urged by Lord Castlereagh to go there to dine, for the purpose of getting further information.

Q. What is it that, perhaps, the history of no other country can show us an example?

A. That of the first minister of state personally exhorting his spies to go to a gentleman's house, and mingle with his family in social intercourse; in order to procure evidence to hang him.

Q. What were proclaimed on the 30th of March 1798?

A. Universal military executions, and "free quarters" were proclaimed all over the country.

Q. What is difficult to detail with due historic coolness?

A. The horrors which followed the proclamation of the 30th of March, 1798.

Q. On the examination of the state prisoners in August 1798, what question was put by the Lord Chancellor?

A. He put the following question to Mr. Emmet: "Pray, Mr. Emmet, what caused the late insurrection?"

Q. What did Emmet answer?

A. Emmet replied: "The free quarters, house-burnings, tortures, and the military executions in the counties of Kildare, Carlow and Wicklow!" Messrs. McNevin and O'Connor gave similar replies, to the same question.

Q. What were Lords Camden, Clare, and Castlereagh determined to do?

A. To goad the Irish into rebellion, which shows the craft, cruelty, and cold-blooded, deliberate wickedness of those ministers at the head of the government.

Q. In all their schemes what had they in view?

A. To unite again the parliaments of Ireland and England. This the traitor Castlereagh soon accomplished.

Q. What means were taken by the military and magistrates, to extort confession of the two great

crimes,—having arms, or being United Irishmen ?

A. Various kinds of torture—half-hanging—pitch-cap, scourging &c., were applied.

Q. How were men treated who were taken on suspicion ?

A. They were sometimes half hanged, or strangled almost to death, before their guilt or innocence could be ascertained by trial.

Q. Who were now pointed out by pretended zealots, as enemies of the crown ?

A. All who wore their hair short, or happened to have any part of their apparel of a green color, both of which, were considered as emblems of a republican, or revolutionary spirit.

Q. What term was adopted to signify a revolutionist ?

A. The term *croppy*, was adopted.

---

## CHAPTER LVIII.

### Pitch-cap—Flogging—Picketing, and Strangulation.

Q. Who introduced the pitch-cap torture ?

A. The North Cork militia, commanded by Lord Kingsborough.

Q. How did this Orange regiment proceed ?

A. Any man having his hair cut short, was looked upon as a *croppy*, or United Irishman, and

was immediately seized and brought into a guard house.

Q. What were kept there ready for service ?

A. Caps, either of coarse linen or strong brown paper, besmeared inside with pitch, were always on hand.

Q. What was put on the head of the unfortunate victim ?

A. One of these caps well heated was compressed on his head, and when judged of a proper degree of coolness, so that it could not be easily pulled off, the sufferer was turned out amidst the horrid acclamations of the merciless torturers.

Q. What caused additional anguish to the sufferers ?

A. Additional anguish was caused from the melted pitch trickling into their eyes. This afforded great enjoyment to those satanic-sportsmen.

Q. In the sufferers' flight, what frequently took place ?

A. In the confusion and hurry of escaping from the ferocious hands of these more than savage barbarians, the blind victims frequently fell, or inadvertently dashed their heads against the walls, in their way.

Q. What was intolerable ?

A. The pain of disengaging this pitched cap from the head was intolerable. The hair was torn out by the roots, the skin was so scalded or blistered, as to adhere to the cap and come off with it.

Q. What is said of a sergeant of the North Cork militia "nicknamed, *Tom the Devil*" ?

A. It is said that he was most ingenious in devising new modes of torture.

Q. What did Tom frequently do ?

A. He rubbed into the hair cut close moistened powder, and then set it on fire.

Q. What frequently took place whilst Tom was shearing his victims for this operation ?

A. Some, had the tips of their ears clipped off; sometimes an entire ear, and often both ears were completely cut off; and many lost part of their noses, during the like preparation.

Q. Were these atrocities publicly practised ?

A. Yes; and strange to tell, practised without the least reserve in open day.

Q. Did not the magistrates or officers interfere ?

A. No; but on the contrary shamefully connived at this extraordinary mode of quieting the people!

Q. Why was such a demoniac system introduced amongst a peaceful people ?

A. It is quite impossible to comprehend why, unless it was to goad them into open revolt.

Q. What effect had these outrages on the people ?

A. Thousands of men who had avoided the United Irish Society before, now began to join it.

Q. What was issued in the County of Wexford ?

A. A proclamation giving greater scope to the ingenuity of magistrates, to devise means of quell-

ing all symptoms of rebellion, as well as, of using every exertion to procure discoveries.

Q. How did the magistrates then proceed ?

A. They fell to the burning of houses, in which pikes or other offensive weapons were discovered, no matter how they came to be brought there.

Q. Did they stop here ?

A. No ; for the dwellings of suspected persons, and those from which any of the inhabitants were found to be absent at night, were also consumed.

Q. What was resorted to, by these cruel zealots, in order to extort information ?

A. Flogging, picketing, and strangulation.

Q. Who now showed great zeal in chastising the people ?

A. Mr. Hunter Gowan, who had for many years distinguished himself by his activity in apprehending robbers, for which, he was rewarded with a pension of £100 per annum.

Q. To what was this robber-detective, exalted ?

A. To the rank of magistrate ; he was afterwards promoted to be a captain of a corps of yeomanry.

Q. Mr. Gowan being both magistrate, and captain, in what manner did he display his zeal ?

A. In his brutal exertions to inspire the people about Gorey, with dutiful submission to the magistracy, and a respectful awe of the yeomanry.

Q. On a public day in the week preceding the insurrection, what did the town of Gorey behold ?

A. The triumphal entry of Mr. Gowan, at the

head of his regiment, with his sword drawn, and a human finger stuck on the point of it.

Q. With this trophy displayed, where did he march?

A. He paraded up and down the streets several times, so that there was not a person in Gorey who did not witness this exhibition; whilst, in the meantime, the triumphant corps displayed all the devices of Orangemen.

Q. After the labor and fatigue of the day, to where did Captain Gowan and his men go?

A. To a public house to refresh themselves, and, *like true blades of game*, their punch was stirred about with the finger that had *graced* their ovation in imitation of keen fox hunters, who *whisk* a bowl of punch, with the brush of a fox, before their boozing commences.

Q. Where did the captain and magistrate, afterwards visit?

A. The house of Mr. Jones where his daughters were stopping.

Q. While taking a lunch that was set before him, of what did the brute brag?

A. He bragged of having blooded his corps that day, and that they were as staunch blood-hounds as any in the world.

Q. What did the daughters request of their father?

A. To show them the croppy finger, which he

deliberately took from his pocket and handed to them.

Q. How did the Misses act ?

A. They dandled it about with senseless exultation, which so shocked a lady present, that she buried her face in her hands, to avoid the horrid sight.

Q. What did Gowan, "captain of the bloodhounds," do ?

A. He took the finger from his daughters, and *archly* dropped it into the disgusted lady's bosom. She instantly fainted, and thus the scene ended !!...

Q. When was Lord Edward Fitzgerald arrested ?

A. On the 19th of May, 1798, after a desperate resistance, in which he was mortally wounded.

Q. On the 23rd of May, 1798, what took place ?

A. The insurrection broke out in the counties of Kildare and Carlow.

Q. How were the peasants armed ?

A. With clumsy pikes and a few guns in bad repairs ; they were of course easily defeated.

---

## CHAPTER LIX.

### The Insurrection of 1798. (Continued.)

Q. What is said of the insurgents ?

A. They were defeated in Carlow, with a loss of 400 slain and 200 men taken prisoners.



Q. What was the fate of these two hundred prisoners ?

A. They were tried by martial law and executed.

Q. On what day did the massacre of Carnew take place ?

A. On the 25th of May, 1798.

Q. Who were massacred on this occasion ?

A. A great number of prisoners, who had been shut up in the jail of that place.

Q. Why were they confined in jail ?

A. On suspicion of being guilty of possessing arms, or of knowing some who possessed them.

Q. How was the massacre conducted ?

A. The prisoners were all taken out of the jail and deliberately shot in the Ball Alley, by the yeomen and a party of the Antrim Militia, in the presence of their officers.

Q. Who was Father John Murphy ?

A. He was parish priest of Kilcormick. He was a gentleman of learning and accomplishments, having studied in the University of Seville, Spain.

Q. How did this good and pious priest employ his time ?

A. In the faithful fulfilment of the various duties of his sacred calling.

Q. How did Father John show his loyalty to the government, and his desire for peace ?

A. By using his greatest exertions and exhorta-

tions to oblige the people to surrender their pikes and fire-arms.

Q. What did the cowardly yeomanry do, when they thought that all the fire-arms were given up, and that there was no further risk to run ?

A. They took courage and set out on Whit Saturday, the 26th of May, 1798, burning and destroying all before them.

Q. What did Father John now behold ?

A. His chapel, his house, and many others of the parish on fire, and in several of them the inhabitants consumed in the flames.

Q. Whither did he betake himself ?

A. Seeing that he could not escape the fury of the yeomanry, he betook himself to a neighboring wood.

Q. By whom was he surrounded ?

A. By the unfortunate people who had escaped with their lives, all came beseeching his Reverence to tell them, what was to become of them and their poor families.

Q. What did the good father answer, being heart-broken at the sight ?

A. He answered them abruptly, that they had better die bravely in the field, than be butchered in their houses.

Q. What did he declare ?

A. That if he had any brave men to join him, he was resolved to sell his life dearly, and prove to those cruel monsters, that they should not commit their murders and devastations with impunity.

Q. What did the people cry out ?

A. With one voice they cried out that they were determined to follow his advice, and do whatever he ordered.

Q. What did Father John then say ?

A. " Well, then, " he replied, " we must arm ourselves the best way we can, and attack these cruel yeomen cavalry on their way back, after satisfying their savage rage on the defenceless country people.

Q. What was Father John's next step ?

A. He went to the high road by which the corps was to return, left a few men near a house with instructions to place two cars across the road the moment the last of the cavalry had passed.

Q. What did he construct a short distance from thence ?

A. He constructed a barricade across the highway, after which he placed the brave fellows who followed him behind a hedge along the road side.

Q. In this position, for whom did they wait in silence ?

A. For the famous yeomen cavalry, returning from being glutted with all manner of crimes during this memorable day, the 26th of May, 1798.

Q. What took place about nine o'clock at night ?

A. The cavalry riding in great speed, on their return, encountered the above-mentioned obstacle (the barricade) on the road.

Q. How did Father John's men act ?

A. They simultaneously attacked them from front to rear armed with their pitch-forks.

Q. What did the cavalry do ?

A. They discharged their pistols, but, got neither time to reload them nor make use of their sabres, till they were literally lifted out of their saddles, and fell dead under their horses' feet.

Q. Who commanded the cavalry ?

A. Lieutenant Brooky, a sanguinary villain, had command in the absence of Lord Mountnorris, and was one of the first killed.

Q. What effect had this victory on Father John and his men ?

A. They were much elated with their victory, and getting arms, ammunition, and horses by it, considered themselves formidable and able at least to beat the cruel yeomanry, in every encounter.

Q. To what place did they now march ?

A. To Camolen Park, the residence of Lord Mountnorris, where they got a great quantity of arms of every description, and which had been taken from the country people for months before.

Q. With what else did they furnish themselves ?

A. With the carbines belonging to the corps, and which had not been distributed, waiting the arrival of the Earl from Dublin.

Q. What did the people, on hearing of Father John's success ?

A. They flocked from all quarters to join him.

Q. As soon as the news reached Gorey, what did the royal troops do ?

A. They evacuated the town, at the same time, letting the prisoners go where they pleased.

Q. But finding that Father John had marched in another direction, what did they do ?

A. They returned and resumed their persecutions as before.

Q. Did they make any arrests ?

A. Yes ; a great number was arrested and placed in the market-house, ready to be butchered the moment the insurgents made their appearance before the town.

---

## CHAPTER LX.

### The Battle of Oulart Hill.

Q. To what place did Father John march with his force, which now amounted to four or five thousand men ?

A. To Oulart Hill, distant of ten miles from Wexford and five from Enniscorthy.

Q. Where did he encamp ?

A. On the above mentioned hill, to give an opportunity to the unfortunate people who were in concealment to come and join him.

Q. What did he now perceive at a distance ?

A. Several corps of yeomen cavalry, but all keep-

ing at a certain distance from the hill, waiting until the infantry from Wexford arrived to make the first attack.

Q. What did he see shortly after ?

A. He saw a large force of infantry on the march, flanked by some cavalry.

Q. As they began to mount the hill, what did Father John do ?

A. He assembled his men and showed them the different corps of cavalry that were waiting, he said, " to see us dispersed by the foot troops, to fall on us and cut us in pieces."

Q. What did he say in exhorting his men ?

A. " Let us remain firm together, said he, and we shall surely defeat the infantry, and then we shall have nothing to dread from the cavalry, as they are too great cowards to venture into the action."

Q. Who commanded the king's troops ?

A. Colonel Foote and Major Lombard.

Q. What were their movements ?

A. The infantry made directly for the insurgents, whilst the yeomen cavalry completely surrounded the hill.

Q. What were Father John's plans ?

A. To draw the enemy on to where he had his men intrenched behind a ditch, and then to charge upon them simultaneously.

Q. How did he effect his plans ?

A. He sent a company of his men to meet the

king's troops, but told them, when they came within two musket-shots of the enemy, to retreat to the top of the hill.

Q. Did they obey his orders ?

A. Yes ; and the infantry followed in haste, thinking it impossible for the insurgents to escape before they came in with them, knowing that the hill was completely surrounded by the several corps of yeomen cavalry.

Q. What took place when the infantry came within half musket-shot of the entrenchment.

A. A few of the insurgents on each flank, and in the centre stood up, at the sight of which the whole line of infantry fired a volley.

Q. What followed ?

A. Instantly, Father John and all his men sallied forth and attacked the infantry, who were in the act of recharging their muskets.

Q. What was the effect ?

A. Though the infantry made the best fight they possibly could with their guns and bayonets, they were soon overpowered and completely defeated by the insurgents.

Q. What may be said of the formidable expedition, which was sent from Wexford on the 27th of May, 1798. to exterminate the insurgents.

A. Very few of them returned to bring the woe-ful tidings of their defeat, or of the glorious victory gained by the oppressed people over them.

Q. What was the fate of the North Cork regiment, which had been the scourge of the country, and so distinguished for hanging, torturing with pitch-caps &c. ?

A. They were all left dead on the battle-field, except Colonel Foote, a sergeant, a drummer, and two privates, who escaped.

Q. Who were the officers of the North Cork regiment, that fell on the field of battle ?

A. Major Lombard, Hon. Captain De Courcy Lieutenants Williams, Ware, Barry, and Ensign Keogh.

Q. How many of the insurgents were killed and wounded ?

A. Three were killed and six wounded.

Q. How did the cavalry distinguish themselves ?

A. The cowards, as Father John had predicted, galloped away from the scene of action.

Q. What acts of cruelty did they commit, in their precipitate retreat to Wexford, Enniscorthy and Gorey.

A. They shot every man they met on the road.

Q. What else did they do ?

A. They went to the houses, called the people to their doors and put them to death, and burned their habitations.

Q. Of what were these blood-thirsty monsters ignorant ?

A. That for every man they put to death in cold



blood, they were sending thousands to join the insurgents' camp.

Q. What did Father John and his little army, now flushed with their last victory, resolve ?

A. They resolved to attack Enniscorthy, in order to give an opportunity to the brave and unfortunate country people, to come from their hiding places and join his standard.

Q. What was the next step taken by Father John ?

A. He and his men crossed the Slaney by the bridge at Scarawalsh.

Q. Had this skilful manoeuvre or counter-march any good result.

A. Yes ; it had the happiest result, for immediately after crossing the river he was joined by large numbers of volunteers.

Q. What was at this time the number of the insurgents ?

A. Seven thousand, eight hundred, all of whom were armed with guns.

Q. What did Rev. Michael Murphy, another popular priest, on reaching Gorey, finding his chapel rifled, and the altar desecrated ?

A. He turned his horse's head and joined the insurgents, who were gathered on Kiltomas hill, near Carnew.

Q. What now blazed on the hill-tops ?

A. Signal fires burned on all the eminences of the country, which seemed as if they had been designed for so many watch-towers.

Q. What was the effect ?

A. All Wexford arose, animated with the passions and purposes of civil war.

Q. What took place on the 28th of May, 1798 ?

A. Ferns, Camolin, and Enniscorthy were taken by the insurgents ; the latter, after an action of four hours, in which two officers and eighty of the yeomanry fell.

Q. What became of the others ?

A. They fled to Wexford, which was placed in a state of defence.

Q. What was the number of militia within the walls of Wexford ?

A. Twelve thousand, this ought to have formed a strong garrison within strong ramparts, against a mere tumultuous peasantry.

Q. The militia thinking otherwise, what did they do ?

A. They sent two imprisoned popular magistrates to Enniscorthy, to exhort and endeavor to disperse the insurgents.

Q. How did one of the agents, Mr Fitzgerald, act ?

A. He joined the insurgents, whilst the other one returned with the news of their hostile determination.

Q. What was the next step taken by the insurgents ?

A. They marched to Wexford and entered into the city without striking a blow.

Q. To where did they proceed on entering the city?

A. To the jail, and released all the prisoners, and insisted that Mr. Bagenal Harvey, one of them, a magistrate, should become their Commander-in-Chief.

Q. Who was Mr Bagenal Harvey?

A. He was a Protestant gentleman of considerable estate, by no means destitute of courage, but in every other respect quite unequal to the task imposed upon him.

Q. To what position was Mr. Harvey transferred, after a trial of his generalship, at the battle of Ross?

A. To the more pacific office of President of the Council, which continued to sit and direct operation from Wexford, with the co-operation of a sub-committee at Enniscorthy.

Q. Where was their principal camp situated?

A. On Vinegar Hill, a lofty eminence near the town of Enniscorthy.

Q. What did the government direct to this point?

A. An army of 13,000 men, with a formidable train of artillery.

Q. Who was Commander-in-Chief of the king's forces?

A. General Lake.

---

## CHAPTER LXI.

**The Battle of Vinegar Hill—The Ulster Rising.**

**Q.** On what day was the battle of Vinegar Hill fought?

**A.** On the 22nd of June, 1798.

**Q.** What did General Lake do on that memorable morning?

**A.** He disposed his army in four columns.

**Q.** What was his plan of action?

**A.** To surround the hill and make a simultaneous attack upon the last stronghold of the Wexford rebellion.

**Q.** Had the insurgents any cannon?

**A.** They had a few pieces of small (half-disabled) cannon, some swivels, and not above two thousand fire-arms of all descriptions, but their determination was desperate.

**Q.** What did General Lake consider?

**A.** That 2000 fire-arms, in the hands of courageous and infuriated men, might be equal to ten times the number under other circumstances.

**Q.** Where did General Duff post himself on the morning of the battle?

**A.** On an eminence which commanded the lower lines of the insurgents' encampment.

**Q.** What now opened on the insurgents?

**A.** A tremendous fire opened upon the four sides of their position; a stream of shell and grape was poured on the uncovered multitude.

Q. How did the peasantry stand the terrible cannonade?

A. With extraordinary fortitude, every shell that burst among them, was followed by shouts of defiance.

Q. How did the other columns now advance under cover of their guns?

A. The columns of Lake, Wilford, Dundas, and Johnson, pushed up the south-eastern and western sides of the eminence.

Q. What did the peasantry do?

A. They kept up their fire and maintained their ground; their cannon was nearly useless, their powder deficient, but they died fighting at their post.

Q. After two hours of desperate fighting, what was the result?

A. At length, the insurgents being enveloped in a torrent of fire, broke and retreated by the unguarded side of the hill to Wexford, and there rested for the night.

Q. What was the loss of life on both sides?

A. Of the insurgents there were 400 killed, and of the royalists about half that number were killed and wounded.

Q. What town now fell into the hands of the royalists?

A. Enniscorthy, and the most fearful excesses were committed on the inhabitants by the soldiery.

Q. What troops particularized themselves by their brutal deeds ?

A. The Hessian troops, who made no distinction between loyalists and insurgents.

Q. Of what diabolical act were the Hessian troops guilty ?

A. The firing of a house, which had been used as an hospital by the insurgents, in which numbers of sick and wounded, who were unable to escape from the flames were burned to ashes.

Q. What does the Rev. Mr. Gordon tell us about this affair ?

A. " He says, that, he was informed by a surgeon that the burning was accidental, the bed-clothes having been set on fire by the wadding of the soldiers' guns, who were shooting the patients in their beds. "

Q. When did the king's troops enter Wexford ?

A. On the 23rd of June, after the city had been in the possession of the insurgents a whole month.

Q. Where had the insurgents to fight another hot battle with the loyalists ?

A. At a place called Goff's Bridge, the deadly strife commenced between one and two o'clock in the afternoon, and continued till near eight.

Q. Were the insurgents repulsed ?

A. Yes ; with some loss, yet, the fate of the day was long doubtful, and many of the king's troops were killed.

Q. What is to be remarked of the Wexford insurrection ?

A. The Wexford insurrection, while it abounded in instances of individual and general heroism, was stained also, on both sides, by many acts of diabolical cruelty.

Q. Who were the aggressors, both in time and in crime ?

A. They were the yeomanry and military, but the popular movement brought dreadful retaliation sometimes.

Q. What would be a profitless task ?

A. It would be a profitless task to draw out a parallel of the crimes committed on both sides. Two facts only need be recorded.

Q. What are they ?

A. From 1798 to 1800, not less than *sixty-five* places of Catholic worship were demolished or burned in Leinster, (twenty-two of which were in Wexford County) and only *one* Protestant Church, that of Old Ross, was destroyed in retaliation.

Q. What else must be remarked ?

A. Though the insurgents sometimes acted, towards men in arms, on the fierce Mosaic maxim, of "an eye for an eye and a tooth for a tooth" yet, no outrage upon females is laid to their charge, even by their enemies.

Q. What does Sir Jonah Barrington tell us ?

A. "That in all the ferocity of the conflict, the storming of towns and of villages, women were

uniformly respected by the insurgents". Though numerous ladies fell occasionally into their power, they never experienced any incivility or misconduct.

Q. What does he say of the foreign troops in the king's service?

A. That they not only brutally ill-treated ladies, but occasionally *shot* them for sport.

Q. What fact does he relate?

A. That a very respectable lady in Enniscorthy (Mrs Stringer, the wife of an attorney), was wantonly shot at her own window by a German soldier, in cold blood.

Q. What took place shortly after?

A. Some of these German soldiers fell into the hands of the insurgents; and although her husband was a royalist, they piked them all, as they told them—"just to teach them how to shoot ladies".

Q. The rebellion in Wexford being put down, whither did the separate bands of the insurgents march?

A. Into Wicklow and Carlow.

Q. Who were the commanders of the insurgents in Wicklow?

A. William and Garret Byrne of Ballymanus, with Holt, Hackett, Fitzgerald, and other local leaders.

Q. What took place on the 25th of June at Hacketstown?

A. A battle, in which the Byrnes were repulsed with considerable loss.



Q. What was their success on the 30th of the same month ?

A. Fortune and skill gave them and their Wexford comrades a victory at Ballyellis, over the royalists ; in which there were two officers and sixty of the king's troops killed.

Q. Where did the royalists sustain another check ?

A. At Ballyrahene, on the 2nd of July, and that, with considerable loss.

Q. How did the insurgents fare at Ballygullen on the 4th ?

A. They were surrounded by the united forces of General Needham, Sir James Duff, and the Marquis of Huntley.

Q. Was this the last considerable action, in which the Wicklow and Wexford men were unitedly engaged ?

A. Yes ; and in the dispersion which followed " William Byrne of Ballymanus, " the hero of his country, paid the forfeit of his life ; while his brother Garrett, subsequently surrendered, and was included in the Banishment Act.

Q. Who were arrested in July, 1798 ?

A. Father Kearns, and Mr. Perry, both of whom were executed by martial-law at Edenderry.

Q. Whither did a band of Wexford men, under command of Father John Murphy and Walter Dervereux, march ?

A. After crossing the Barrow at Gore's bridge, they marched to Kilkenny.

Q. Where did they surprise the royalists ?

A. At Castlecomer, and after a sharp action took the town.

Q. Whither did they continue their march ?

A. They continued their march towards Athy, in Kildare.

Q. At Killcomney hill, to what were the insurgents forced ?

A. To engage in battle under most unfavorable circumstances.

Q. Who fell in this engagement ?

A. Father Michael Murphy. Father John Murphy the precursor of the insurrection, was captured and conveyed a prisoner to General Duff's head-quarters at Tullow.

Q. Before whom was Father John placed on trial ?

A. Before Sir James Duff, Lord Roden, Colonels Eden and Foster, and Major Hall, who composed a Military Commission.

Q. What was the conduct of Hall during the trial ?

A. Hall had the meanness to put to him, prisoner as he was, several insulting questions, which at length the high-spirited *patriot* answered with a blow.

Q. What did the commission think ?

A. The commission thought him highly dangerous, and instantly ordered him to be executed.

Q. What was done with his body ?

A. His body was burned, his head spiked on the market-house of Tullow, and his memory gibbeted in all the loyal publications of the period.

Q. What was found on his person before being executed ?

A. A Crucifix, a Pix, and letters from many Protestants, asking his protection.

Q. Did not Father John's action on the field of battle, and his tragical end place a blemish on his reputation ?

A. Certainly not. The priest who girded on the sword only when he found his altar overthrown, and his flock devoured by wolves, need not fear to look posterity in the face.

Q. What was the fate of the Leinster leaders ?

A. Some were executed, whilst others were sent into exile,

Q. Was not the Ulster rising more general than the Leinster one ?

A. No ; though great time and labor had been expended on the Ulster organization, prior to the rebellion.

Q. What was the first movement of the Ulster insurgents ?

A. They marched against the town of Antrim, which was occupied by the 22d light dragoons,

commanded by Colonel Lumley, and the local yeomanry under Lord O'Neill.

Q. Were the insurgents successful ?

A. In the first assault they were ; Lord O'Neill, five officers, forty-seven rank and file were killed and two guns were captured.

Q. What now arrived ?

A. Lumley's dragoons had hardly vanished out of sight, when a strong reinforcement from Blaris camp arrived and renewed the action, changing premature exultation into panic and confusion.

Q. What took place on the 7th of June, 1798 ?

A. A battle was fought near Saintfield in the County Down, in which the insurgents led by Dr. Jackson, were successful.

Q. What did the insurgents do next day ?

A. They lay in ambuscade, and nearly surrounded a body of troops under Colonel Stapleton, and took about sixty of them.

Q. Where did the insurgents now post themselves ?

A. On Wind-mill Hill, above the little town of Ballinahinch.

Q. Who marched against them ?

A. General Nugent and Colonel Steward, with a force of fifteen hundred men.

Q. How did the insurgents sustain themselves ?

A. With great gallantry during several hours, but being overpowered they broke and fled ; their leader, Mr Henry Monro, was captured and taken

to Lisburn, where he was tried by court-martial and executed.

Q. Whither did the remaining force of the insurgents retire ?

A. To the mountains of Slieve Croob, where they soon surrendered or separated, thus terminating this short and partial, but active insurrection in the north.

Q. By what was the failure of Ulster attended ?

A. By the usual penalty of failure, execution and exile.

Q. Was there any notable attempt at insurrection in Munster ?

A. No, with the exception of a trifling skirmish between the West-Meath yeomanry, and a body of 480 peasants near Bandon.

---

## CHAPTER LXII.

### The Rising in Connaught—The French land at Killala

Q. What broke out unexpectedly in Connaught in the month of August, 1798 ?

A. The flame extinguished in the blood of Leinster and Ulster, again blazed out for some days with portentous brightness in Connaught.

Q. What is said of the counties of Mayo, Sligo, Roscommon and Ga'way ?

A. These counties had been partially organized

by those fugitives from Orange oppression in the north, who, in the years '95, '96 and '97, had been compelled to flee for their lives into Connaught, to the number of several thousands.

Q. What did they bring with them ?

A. They brought with them the tale of their sufferings, the secret of Defenderism.

Q. What did they teach the peasantry of the west ?

A. They taught them what manner of men, then held sway over the rest of the country, and how easily it would be for Irishmen once united and backed by France, to establish under their own *green flag*, both religious and civil liberty.

Q. Late in August 1798, what arrived ?

A. Three French frigates carrying ten hundred men, commanded by General Humbert, arrived from France and landed at Killala.

Q. Under what colors did this little fleet enter Killala Bay.

A. Under English colors, and the feint succeeded so well, that two of the Protestant bishop's sons with the Port-Surveyor, on going on board of one of them, were surprised to find themselves prisoners.

Q. What three Irishmen accompanied Humbert from France ?

A. Matthew Tone, Bartholomew Teeling and Mr. Sullivan.

Q. Where did General Humbert place his headquarters ?

A. In the bishop's castle, upon which he mounted a green flag with the inscription, " *Erin go Bragh.*"

Q. What did Humbert do the morning after his arrival ?

A. He began his military operations by pushing forward to Ballina, which town he took possession of on the 25th of August, the garrison having fled on his approach.

Q. The French flag being now unfurled on Irish soil, what was it sure to attract ?

A. It was sure to attract the patriotic part of the population around it ; as, indeed, the same phenomenon would do this day.

Q. How did the peasants act ?

A. Hundreds of them repaired to the French standard, and with eagerness received arms and uniforms.

Q. What did the French commander now determine ?

A. To attack the forces at Castlebar, he therefore marched on the 26th towards that town, with 800 French troops, and less than 1500 of Irish recruits.

Q. What was the strength of the English army at Castlebar ?

A. Six thousand, under command of General Lake.

Q. With this force of well disciplined men, what did General Lake reasonably think ?

A. That he would give a good account of eight hundred French, and some raw levies of Connaught men.

Q. What did the English commander expect ?

A. He expected the French would advance by the high road leading to Castlebar.

Q. What way did Humbert take ?

A. Having good guides, he took the way over the Pass of Barnagee westward, and appeared early in the morning, not precisely at the point where he was looked for by the English.

Q. Where did the English troops take a position ?

A. On an eminence, about a mile from Castlebar, which to an unskilled person, seemed unassailable.

Q. What were now the position of the two armies ?

A. They were posted at musket range from each other.

Q. How was the battle introduced ?

A. By the English artillery, which played with effect on the advancing army ?

Q. How did the French act ?

A. They kept up a scattered fire of musketry, and took up the attention of the English army by irregular movements.

Q. In half an hour, however, what took place ?

A. The English troops became alarmed\* by a



movement of small bodies of French, to turn their left, the line wavered, and in a few minutes the whole royal army was completely routed.

Q. How does Sir Jonah Barrington describe their flight?

A. He says ; " the flight of the infantry was that of a mob, all the royal artillery was taken, the heavy cavalry galloped amongst the infantry, and made the best of their way through thick and thin, towards Castlebar and Tuam. "

Q. Were they pursued by the French ?

A. Yes ; by such as could get horses to carry them.

Q. What else does Sir Jonah Barrington say about the royal army ?

A. He says ; " so violent was the panic of the British, that, they never halted till they reached Tuam, forty miles from the field of battle. They lost the whole of their artillery and five stand of colors.

Q. What was their loss in killed, wounded and prisoners ?

A. The French calculated the loss of the enemy at six hundred.

Q. Where did the flying British army proceed ?

A. The fugitives renewed their march, or rather flight, from Tuam on the same night, and proceeded to Athlone, where some of them arrived at one o'clock on Tuesday the 29th having performed a march of above seventy English miles, in twenty-

seven hours. The whole battle and route are familiarly known to this day in Connaught, as the "Races of Castlebar."

Q. What was now established ?

A. A provincial government was at once established, with Mr. Moore, as President, and proclamations were issued in the name of the, "Irish Republic."

Q. Who was at this time Viceroy of Ireland ?

A. Lord Cornwallis, a name conspicuous in American history.

Q. On what did Cornwallis determine ?

A. On raising a great army and marching against the French and Irish insurgents.

Q. What took place on the 30th of August ?

A. The whole British forces were in movement towards the capital of Mayo, as they had been towards Vinegar Hill two months before.

Q. What was now the position of Humbert and his allies.

A. It was a most critical one indeed, surrounded on all sides--their retreat being cut off by sea, their frigates having returned to France.

Q. How many men had Humbert under his command ?

A. Three thousand. The English army against him was thirty thousand strong, with as many more in reserve, ready to be called into action at a day's notice.

Q. On what did the French general determine ?

A. To evacuate Castlebar, and if possible to reach the mountains of Leitrim.

Q. What did he expect to open ?

A. A communication with Ulster, and the northern coast, upon which he hoped soon to see succor arrive from France.

Q. With this object in view, where did he march ?

A. To Cooloney, thirty five miles from Castlebar.

Q. On arriving at Cooloney, by whom was he opposed ?

A. By Colonel Vereker of the Limerick militia, who had marched from Sligo for that purpose.

Q. What was the issue of the conflict ?

A. After a sharp action, in which Vereker lost all his artillery, he was obliged to retreat to Sligo.

Q. Where did Humbert now direct his march ?

A. To Granard, in the County of Longford, where an insurrection had taken place.

Q. By whom was he pursued ?

A. By General Crawford, who commanded a large army.

Q. What had Humbert to do ?

A. To make a forced march of 110 miles in three days and a half, during which he flung half his guns into the rivers that he crossed, lest they should fall into the hands of his pursuers.

Q. How did he find himself situated after arriving at Ballinamuck ?

A. He found himself entirely surrounded by the troops of Crawford, Lakt and Cornwallis.

Q. How did the French General manage in this desperate situation ?

A. He arranged his troops with no other object, as it must be presumed, than to maintain the honor of the French arms ; the numbers against him being ten to one.

Q. What was the result, after an action of half an hour's duration ?

A. The French surrendered as prisoners of war.

Q. What was the fate of the Irish insurgents who accompanied Humbert to that fatal field ?

A. They were excluded from all quarter, and were reserved for the full vengeance of the victors.

Q. Who was executed on the field ?

A. Mr. Blake, who had formerly been a British officer.

Q. Who were executed the next week at Dublin ?

A. Mr. Tone, and Mr. Teeling. Mr. Moore, through the clemency of Cornwallis, was sentenced to banishment, but his noble soul took flight on shipboard to holier regions, leaving his lifeless body in the hands of Ireland's persecutors.

Q. What was the fate of ninety of the Longford and Kilkenny militia, who had joined the French on the day of the " Races of Castlebar " ?

A. They were hanged by Cornwallis at Ballinamuck.

Q. How did one of the militia defend himself ?

A. By insisting "that it was the army, and not he, who were deserters; that whilst he was fighting hard all ran away and left him to be murdered."

Q. To what was the country now given up?

A. To pillage and massacre.

Q. Give an instance of their excessive thirst for blood?

A. At the re-taking of Killala a few days later, the English soldiers put 400 to the sword, of whom fully one-half were non-combatants.

Q. What now occupied the British ministers, the rebellion being crushed?

A. They were occupied with the plan of Union between the Irish and English parliaments.

---

### CHAPTER LXIII.

#### The Reign of George III. (concluded.)

Q. What steps did they take to carry out their design?

A. They proceeded with their ordinary methods to pack the Irish parliament, by bribing and corrupting its members.

Q. When was the question of the Union first brought before the Irish parliament?

A. In 1799.

Q. Was it rejected?

A. It was rejected that year by a majority of the Irish House of Commons.

Q. What was the conduct of Mr. Pitt and his

Irish colleagues, Lords Clare and Castlereagh, on this defeat ?

A. They redoubled their efforts to bribe the Irish members during the recess ; peerages, bishoprics, seats on the bench, commands in the army and navy, were freely given in exchange for votes for the Union.

Q. What sum was distributed in bribes ?

A. The sum of £3,000,000.

Q. What sum was given to boroughs ?

A. The sum of £1,275,000 was given as compensation to boroughs, for sending members to parliament, favorable to the Union.

Q. Who was the chief advocate of the Union in England ?

A. Excepting Mr. Pitt, the Prime Minister, its greatest supporter was the talented Channing, a man of Irish descent, and its ablest opponent, the celebrated Richard Brinsley Sheridan.

Q. Did the Irish people make an effort to preserve their parliament ?

A. Yes ; 707,000 of them petitioned against the Union ; all the orders in the state were opposed to it. But Pitt, and his henchmen Clare and Castlereagh, were equal to the occasion.

Q. When did the Irish parliament meet for the last time ?

A. On the 15th of January, 1800.

Q. What act was passed in this parliament ?

A. The Act of Union, after the most unparalleled scenes of bribery and deception.

Q. What now waved for the first time over Bedford Tower, Dublin ?

A. The imperial united standard, while the guns of the royal battery in Phoenix Park announced to prostrate Ireland that her national independence was no more, that her guilt-stained parliament had effected its own annihilation.

Q. Why did the English government insist on carrying the Union ?

A. Because of England's intolerance of Irish prosperity.

Q. Who distinguished themselves by their opposition to the Union ?

A. Grattan, Plunket, Ponsonby, Foster, Saurin, Barrington, Burke, Burrows, Egan, O'Donnell, Parnell and Fitzgerald.

Q. When did this *infamous act* receive the approbation of the king ?

A. On the 2nd of February following, and then, the parliament of Ireland ceased to exist.

Q. What have been the effects of the Union ?

A. It has degraded Ireland to the condition of a province, besides making her a despised suppliant in a foreign parliament.

Q. What are the great evils entailed on Ireland by the Union.

A. The vast increase of her national debt, and

the great inequality of her representation in parliament

Q. At the time, what were the respective national debts of Ireland, and England ?

A. Ireland's debt was £26,841,219, while England's was £420,305,210.

Q. By the Act of Union, what was Ireland to have ?

A. A separate exchequer, and was only to be taxed in proportion to her national debt.

Q. In 1816, what did the British government unite ?

A. The English and Irish exchequers, in direct violation of the Act of Union, and thus the debt of Ireland was increased to £110,730,519.

Q. As the Irish representatives in the British parliament, are far inferior in number to those of the English, what follows ?

A. It follows, as a matter of course, that no measure conflicting with the English interest, will pass that body in favor of Ireland.

Q. While Ireland is deprived of her national legislature, what is said of her representatives ?

A. They are obliged to reside a great portion of their time in the capital of England, thus drawing from their native country a great amount of wealth which would otherwise be spent at home.

Q. Was the Irish Constitution of 1782, which the Union was meant to destroy, productive of benefits to Ireland ?



A. It was productive of the very highest benefits, the country's progress in prosperity was astonishing, while the Constitution lasted.

Q. How does Mr. Plunket, afterwards, Lord Chancellor of Ireland, describe the progress of Ireland from 1782 to 1800 ?

A. He describes it thus—"Her revenues, her trade, her manufactures, thriving beyond the hope or the example of any other county of equal extent."

Q. How does Mr. Jebb, who was then M. P. and afterwards judge in the King's Bench, describe Ireland, under a *Free Constitution* ?

A. "In the course of fifteen years," says Mr. Jebb, "her agriculture, her commerce, and her manufactures have swelled to an amount that, the most sanguine friends of Ireland would not have dared to prognosticate".

Q. What does the Right Hon. John Foster, speaker of the Irish House of Commons, say ?

A. He says: "It (the Constitution of 1782) not only secured, but absolutely showered down upon Ireland, more blessings, more trade, more affluence, than ever fell to *her* lot in treble the period under the Union.

Q. What did Lord Clare, say, in 1798, of the prosperity of Ireland under her own Constitution ?

A. Speaking of the period of the Irish Constitution, he says: "There is not a nation in the habitable globe, which has advanced in cultivation and

commerce, in agriculture and manufactures, with the same rapidity, in the same period."

Q. What was the source of her prosperity ?

A. The Irish Constitution established in 1782.

Q. What is your reason for affirming so ?

A. Because a native parliament is infinitely better suited to promote the prosperity of the kingdom, than an assembly of strangers, whose feelings towards Ireland are often jealous and hostile.

Q. What idea have the British law-makers, of the Union ?

A. Their notions of Union consist mainly in taking Irish money for English purposes.

Q. Mention some more evils entailed on Ireland by the Union ?

A. The destruction of her trade and manufacture, the enormous drain of absentee rents, which exceed £4,000,000; and the drain of the surplus taxes to the amount of £2,000,000 annually.

Q. What more ?

A. The enormous emigration of the Irish people from the country, which is thus despoiled of the resources that ought to support them at home.

Q. What is another great evil to the country ?

A. The alienation from Ireland of the affections of the gentry, whom intercourse with dominant England infects with a contempt for their native land, and the scornful refusal of Irish rights.

Q. These evils, you say, are the natural conse-

quences of Ireland being governed, by a foreign parliament ?

A. Undoubtedly so, because a country represented, by an alien parliament, whose members regard with apathy at best, and too often with contemptuous hostility, can never be prosperous and happy.

Q. What should be the duty of all Irishmen, with regard to the Union ?

A. To get rid o. it as fast as they can—by all legal, peaceful and constitutional means.

Q. What disturbance took place after the Union ?

A. A new rebellion was attempted, July 23rd 1803 ; but the movement was a failure, and its leaders, Robert Emmet and Thomas Russell, paid for it with their lives, September 20th.

Q. What part did Irishmen take in the European wars of this period ?

A. They fought with national bravery for their old oppressor (England) in all her campaigns, and materially contributed to the victory of Waterloo, in 1815.

Q. What must be admitted ?

A. That nearly one-half of the British troops under Wellington at this memorable battle of Waterloo, were Irish. It is a shame to be obliged to confess it. Their country can take no pride in those Irishmen ; Irish history refuses to know their names.

Q. What is certain ?

A. That while a vestige of genuine Irish feeling remains among our people, Irishmen will speak with pride of the Irish Brigade at Fontenoy, and with shame and repugnance of the Irish regiments at Waterloo.

Q. Were there not Irishmen in the service of France at that period ?

A. Yes ; the Irish Legion, the relics of '98, but it was not present at Waterloo.

Q. Were there not Irishmen in the American army at this epoch ?

A. Yes ; several of them took an active part against *old contaminated* England in the war of 1812.

Q. In what year did George the Third die ?

A. In 1820.

---

#### CHAPTER LXIV.

##### Reign of George IV, and William. IV. O'Connell's Leadership.

Q. What notable event occurred in 1829 ?

A. George IV, came to Ireland, where he spent three weeks in pageantry.

Q. What was the political object of his visit ?

A. To delude the Catholics with empty civilities, in place of substantial concessions.

Q. Were the Catholics thus deluded ?

A. No ; Daniel O'Connell, a Catholic lawyer of

high eminence, assumed the leadership of his co-religionists.

Q. What did O'Connell found ?

A. The Catholic Association, which originally consisted of only seven members, but soon embraced within its circle all the friends of civil and religious liberty in the empire.

Q. Was the Catholic Association successful ?

A. Yes ; it combined and organized the people so extensively and so powerfully, that their efforts became irresistible.

Q. What measures did O'Connell advocate ?

A. The Emancipation of the Catholics, and the repeal of the Union.

Q. When was Emancipation conceded ?

A. In April, 1829.

Q. Who were the leaders of the measure in the English parliament ?

A. Sir Robert Peel, in the Commons, and the Duke of Wellington, in the Lords.

Q. What declarations did those statesmen make ?

A. That their old opinions (which were adverse to the measure,) were unchanged ; but that they deemed it expedient to grant it, rather than risk a civil war.

Q. What offices and places of trust did Emancipation throw open to Catholics ?

A. All offices in the state excepting only the throne, the viceroyalty of Ireland, and the office of Lord Chancellor in both countries.

Q. What bold step did O'Connell take in 1828 ?

A. He had himself nominated as member of parliament, for the County Clare.

Q. Who was his opponent ?

A. Vesey Fitzgerald a protestant, but a very good man, and one who had sat in parliament for some years.

Q. What must be borne in mind ?

A. That the voting people at that time, were altogether in the hands of the landlords.

Q. What, then, were the scenes to be witnessed on election days ?

A. The bailiff, the land-steward, and the landlord, drove their tenants before them, as you would drive a flock of sheep, to give their votes. So that one landlord could say to another, " I have so many votes, how many have you ? "

Q. What was the result of this coercive measure ?

A. That the people had no voice at all, except simply the registering of their votes.

Q. Among what class was Vesey Fitzgerald most popular ?

A. The aristocratic class, and of course, was the landlord's choice.

Q. On whom had O'Connell to rely for his election ?

A. On the poorer classes, who were resolved to sacrifice all in his interest. He had of course the clergy on his side.

Q. What effect did O'Connell's nomination produce in the British government ?

A. The British government was silent with utter amazement and astonishment, at the audacity of the man. The whole kingdom stood confounded at the greatness of his courage.

Q. What did O'Connell raise ?

A. He raised a standard, on which was inscribed "Freedom from landlord intimidation !" "Every man has his own conscience, and his own rights," and by a sweeping majority of the honest and manly Irishmen of the County Clare, O'Connell was elected member of parliament.

Q. While the members of parliament were discussing the terms of Emancipation, and asking one another could they admit Catholics to take a seat, who appeared on the floor of the House of Commons ?

A. Daniel O'Connell, as member for Clare. He advanced to the table to take the oaths of allegiance and loyalty.

Q. What did the clerk of the House do ?

A. He rose and presented O'Connell the book on which he was to be sworn.

Q. What question did O'Connell put to the clerk ?

A. O'Connell asked "what am I to be sworn to ?"

Q. What was the clerk's reply ?

A. You will please swear to the following, viz

“ That the Sacrifice of the Mass, the veneration of the Blessed Virgin Mary and the Saints, is damnable idolatry.

Q. How did O’Connell reply to this blasphemous proposition ?

A. Throwing down the book he said, “ In the name of two hundred millions of men ; in the name of eight millions of the Irish race ; in the name of the God of heaven and the God of truth, I reject that oath ; for it is a damnable falsehood ! ”

Q. What right did they then deny O’Connell ?

A. The right to take his seat in parliament ?

Q. What did this heroic man then do ?

A. He returned to Clare to be re-elected.

Q. How was O’Connell received on his return to Ireland ?

A. With the greatest demonstration of joy, the people crowded around him and rent the air with acclamations of triumph.

Q. What was his reception on reaching Limerick ?

A. All the trades turned out with flags and banners ; the people assembled in thousands and, with cheers escorted him through the city.

Q. As he neared the town of victory, (Ennis) what did O’Connell meet ?

A. Another multitude who brought a triumphal car with them, and on this he was drawn by the enthusiastic people into the city.



Q. When was O'Connell again returned for Clare ?

A. On the 30th of July, 1829, he was returned for a second time ; and eight millions of Irishmen sat down in the House of Commons, in the person of Daniel O'Connell.

Q. Did this heroic and unparalleled action of O'Connell remain unknown ?

A. No ; it spread far and wide over the whole extent of Europe, so that, when the King of Belgium was elected three votes were given for Daniel O'Connell.

Q. How was he regarded by some of the ablest men of France ?

A. With admiration ; and as France was then agitated to its very centre, some of her most noble and talented sons were looking to Ireland and O'Connell, and learning from him how he worked bloodless social revolutions. The great Count De Montalembert was one of his greatest admirers, and one who wished to learn from this champion of rights.

Q. Was O'Connell a practical Catholic ?

A. Eminently so ; no morning, summer or winter, but found him one of the first at the nearest Catholic Church, and it was there at the Holy Sacrifice, that he obtained strength and courage to carry out his great and noble work.

Q. In his first letter, written just before the opening of parliament, what did he say was his motto ?

A. "For God and the people." He proved it by his fidelity to his faith, not only in words, but also in deeds.

Q. When did O'Connell take his seat in parliament ?

A. At the opening of the session of 1830, he took his seat, an act having been previously passed for rendering the oaths to be taken by Catholic members conformable to the tenets of their religion's creed.

Q. What did O'Connell become after taking his seat ?

A. He became such a power in the English parliament, that both Hunt and Brougham, were glad to avail themselves of his services.

Q. In what year did George IV, die ?

A. In 1830, aged 68 years, after having reigned ten years.

Q. What was his character ?

A. His character is given in one sentence, by the eloquent pen of Mooney, "A heartless, indolent, sensualist, without sentiments of honor or feeling.

Q. On the death of George IV, who ascended the English throne ?

A. His brother, King William IV.

Q. When did parliament next sit ?

A. On the 4th of February, 1830, but it soon dissolved, and a new election took place.

Q. What victory did O'Connell gain at this time ?

A. He gained a brilliant victory over the Ber-

esford interest at Waterford ; a considerable number of Catholics now entered parliament for the first time.

Q. By what was the year 1831 marked ?

A. By the establishment of the National system of education.

Q. What occurred January 6th, 1839 ?

A. The great storm known as the " big wind. "

Q. Did O'Connell rest satisfied with Catholic Emancipation ?

A. No ; in 1840, he organized the Repeal Association, for the purpose of obtaining a severance of the Union between England and Ireland.

Q. Who was his ablest ally ?

A. Richard Lalor Shiel, who was a distinguished orator and an able writer.

Q. Who were his other associates ?

A. His son John O'Connell, O'Gorman Mahon, Thomas Steele, Charles Gavan Duffy, and others.

Q. What was O'Connell's plan ?

A. To win the support of the people by agitation, feeling confident that the English government would not dare resist the force of public opinion.

Q. How was this opinion manifested ?

A. Through the press and the pulpit, but especially by several great monster meetings held during 1843.

Q. Did O'Connell have any resources in money ?

A. Yes ; he had the repeal rent, raised by penny

subscription among the poor, which amounted on an average to £800 a week.

Q. Were O'Connells meetings largely attended ?

A. Yes. the people assembled to the number of 150 000 at Ballinglass ; at Carleville, 320.000 ; Kilkenny 300.000 ; at Loughrea 400.000 ; at Cork, 500,000 ; at Lismore, 600,000 ; at Mullagmast, 800.000 ; and at Tara, not less than 1,000,000 gathered around our *hero* to listen to his powerful and patriotic eloquence.

Q. Were his auditors confined to the inhabitants of Ireland ?

A. No ; numbers came from England and Scotland to see and to hear the great Liberator.

Q. What violent measures did the government take, in order to frustrate his design ?

A. The government first dismissed all repealers from office, and secondly filled the country with British troops.

Q. What did it forbid at the same time ?

A. All Repeal mass-meetings.

Q. Whom did the government prosecute ?

A. Daniel O'Connell and eight of his associates, on the charge of attempting to overthrow the government.

Q. Who were the English ministers that were opposed to O'Connell's Repeal Association ?

A. Sir Robert Peel and the Duke of Wellington.

Q. Was O'Connell found guilty ?

A. Yes ; the government minions packed a jury, and obtained a favorable verdict.

Q. What was his sentence ?

A. To pay a fine of £2000, and to be imprisoned for one year.

Q. Was this unjust sentence revoked ?

A. Yes ; after three months, and O'Connell was released in September, 1844.

Q. What did Lord Denman, one of the judges say on this occasion ?

A. " If such practices as have taken place in the present instance in Ireland shall continue, trial by jury will become a mockery, a delusion and a snare. "

Q. How old was O'Connell at this time ?

A. He was sixty-eight years of age. This close confinement, in English prisons, preyed not a little on that once robust, but now shattered frame of the Liberator.

Q. By what disastrous plague was Ireland visited about the close of the year 1845 ?

A. The blight on the potato crop, which was the precursor of the terrible plague and famine of the succeeding years, '46, '47 and '48.

Q. What steps did O'Connell take, heart-broken at the sight of his famine-stricken countrymen ?

A. He rose from his sick bed, and with tottering steps, the aged man, the father of his coun-

try set out for London, and appeared before parliament.

Q. What doleful picture did he place before these English oppressors of Irish rights ?

A. He laid before them as in a picture the agonies of Ireland.

Q. What did he implore in behalf of his dying countrymen ?

A. With eyes filled with tears, he implored the mercy of England upon the dying people ; and earnestly asked a subsidy to save their lives.

---

## CHAPTER LXV.

### Reign of Queen Victoria.

Q. William IV. dying in 1837, who succeeded to the throne ?

A. Queen Victoria.

Q. Did O'Connell obtain the Grant for his country ?

A. No ; Ireland was told that she might die ; England would give her no assistance.

Q. What was the father of his country told ?

A. To go and seek some genial clime ; and there die, for there was no mercy for his Irish people.

Q. Where did O'Connell now turn his steps ?

A. To Rome ; journeying by short stages, accompanied by two of his sons and chaplain.

Q. When did he set out for the *Eternal City*?

A. In February 1847, amid the horror of the raging famine, O'Connell old, sick, and heavy-laden, left Ireland, and left it for ever.

Q. What did he earnestly desire ?

A. To see the Pope before he died, and to breathe out his soul at Rome, in the choicest odor of sanctity.

Q. Did O'Connell reach Rome ?

A. No ; he proceeded only as far as Genoa, and there died on the 15th of May, fortified with the Sacraments of the Church.

Q. What were his last words ?

A. " When I am dead, said he, take out my heart and send it to Rome : let my body be brought back to mingle with the dust of Ireland !"

Q. What was done with his body after death ?

A. It was embalmed and taken to Ireland. His heart was deposited in an urn, as he had directed in his will, with this inscription :—" It was bequeathed to Rome," " Daniel O'Connell, born in Kerry, died on the 15th May, 1847, in Genoa in the 72nd year of his age. "

Q. Of what was this donation a touching memento ?

A. Of his life-long devotion to the See of St. Peter.

Q. By whom was this precious treasure conveyed to Rome ?

A. By Dr. Miley and his son D. O'Connell.

Q. By whom were they presented to his Holiness, Pius IX ?

A. By his Lordship, Bishop Cullen.

Q. What did the Holy Father exclaim ?

A. " Since I had not the happiness of embracing the hero of Christianity himself, " exclaimed the Pope, " let me at least embrace his son. I have read, " he continued, " with extreme interest the account of his last moments : his death was indeed blessed. "

Q. How was O'Connell's funeral obsequies celebrated in Rome ?

A. With the greatest pomp and magnificence. Artisans, sculptures, painters, and architects, were employed during a week in making preparations for the funeral ceremonies.

Q. With what were the walls of the Basilica emblazoned ?

A. With texts of Scripture, which were an evidence of the honor in which O'Connell's memory was held by the Holy See, as well as, of her appreciation of his life.

Q. When were O'Connell's remains removed to Ireland ?

A. In August following, they arrived in Dublin and were received with almost royal honors and entered in the family vault in " Glasnevin Cemetery. "

Q. What has ever been the great curse of Ireland ?



A. Disunion among her leaders.

Q. What memorable instance of this occurred in recent times ?

A. During the last years of O'Connell's life, his agitation policy was bitterly opposed by a host of ardent Young Patriots.

Q. What did these patriots maintain ?

A. That Ireland's freedom would be secured only by armed force.

Q. What course did they pursue ?

A. They organized the " Young Ireland Party," and they established the *Nation* to promote its views.

Q. Who were the principal writers of this able newspaper ?

A. John Mitchel, Thomas Davis, and Charles Gavan Duffy.

Q. Did Ireland improve since the last generation ?

A. No ; owing to cruel oppressive laws, her condition grew worse every year, till finally in August, 1846, a dreadful scourge began to afflict the country.

Q. What are the words of Thomas Darcy McGee ?

A. " Then," says McGee, " Ireland, the hospitable among the nations, smitten with famine, deserted by her imperial masters, lifted up her voice, and uttered that cry of awful anguish which shook the ends of the earth."

Q. Was the famine caused by the scarcity of food in the country ?

A. It was not; the food was there, but it was extorted from the famished people by grasping landlords, who exported it to England for greater profit.

Q. How long did the famine last in Ireland ?

A. For three years; during which time about 1,000,000, of persons, men, women and children, died of starvation.

Q. Was anything done to relieve the distressed ?

A. Yes; but not by the English, " whose ships, laden to the gunwales, sailed out of Irish ports, while the charity of the world, *minus* England, was coming in. "

Q. In 1846, what were shipped to England, out of Ireland ?

A. Provisions to the value of £15,000,000, were exported to England.

Q. What was the produce of the country in 1847 ?

A. In 1847, the " famine year, " the produce of the country amounted to £44,958,124, an amount sufficient to feed twice the population of Ireland. (*Perraud*, P. 115.)

Q. What illustrious persons sent assistance to Ireland ?

A. " The Czar, the Sultan, and the Pope sent their rubles and their pauls. The Pacha of Egypt, the Shah of Persia, the Emperor of China, the Rajahs of India, conspired to do for Ireland what

her so-styled rulers refused to do—to keep her young and old people living in the land.

Q. What nation went generously into this work of mercy ?

A. America did more in this work of mercy, than all the rest of the world !—McGee.

Q. What effect did the famine produce ?

A. It caused thousands to flee in horror from the country. Within the ten years from 1847 to 1857, as many as 1,298,603 Irish emigrants landed in the United States.

Q. To what did the whole emigration from Ireland for this epoch, amount ?

A. To 1,873,533 souls.

Q. What is the total number of emigrants who left Ireland from January 1st, 1846, to January, 1878 ?

A. The enormous number of 3,592,779. Of this number, 3,056,630, arrived at different ports of the United States.

---

### CHAPTER LXIII.

#### 'Attempt at Insurrection in 1848.

Q. What event marked the year 1848 ?

A. The foundation of the Dublin Catholic University; and the attempt at insurrection by the leaders of the Young Ireland Party.

Q. Mention a few of the Young Ireland leaders ?

A. William Smith O'Brien, Richard O'Gorman, Thomas Darcy McGee, and Thomas Francis Meagher, are among those best known.

Q. What did John Mitchel, one of the editors of the *Nation* declare ?

A. That the time had come for calling upon the Irish people, to face an armed struggle.

Q. Who were the most able and vehement opponents, of Mitchel's physical force propositions ?

A. William Smith O'Brien, John B. Dillon, Gavan Duffy, T. F. Meagher, Richard O'Gorman, Michael Doherty, and Darcy McGee.

Q. Why did they, then, oppose Mitchel's war propositions ?

A. Because they thought it would be madness to rush into rebellion unprepared, and hoped to carry out their designs by milder means. They were also opposed to French commune intervention, which Mitchel relied on.

Q. What is said of John Mitchel ?

A. He was the first man, who, since Robert Emmet perished on the scaffold in 1808, preached an Irish insurrection, and the total severance of Ireland from the British crown.

Q. What did Mitchel revive ?

A. The revolutionary party in Irish politics. He thrust utterly aside the doctrines of loyalty and legality.

Q. What did he declare ?

A. That constitutionalism was demoralizing the

country. By " blood and iron " alone could Ireland be saved.

Q. To whom were these violent doctrines abhorrent ?

A. To O'Brien, and indeed to nearly every one of the Confederate leaders.

Q. What did William Smith O'Brien declare ?

A. That either he or Mitchel must quit the organization.

Q. What was now debated ?

A. The question of insurrection was publicly debated during two days at full meetings, and on the 5th of February, 1848, the " war " party was utterly out-voted, and Mitchel retired from the Confederation.

Q. What did Mitchel, rendered desperate by this reprehension of his doctrines ?

A. He started a weekly newspaper, called the *United Irishman*, to openly preach his policy of insurrection.

Q. How was he now regarded by his countrymen ?

A. They laughed in derision or shouted in anger at his mad proceedings, but soon events though unforeseen then, were destined to bring them over to his principles.

Q. What news arrived from the Continent, as the third number of Mitchel's new journal appeared ?

A. The news of the French revolution burst on an astonished world. It set Ireland in a blaze.

Q. What did each day add ?

A. Some excitement, every post brought tidings of some popular rising, invariably crowned with victory.

Q. Into what was Ireland now drawn ?

A. She was irresistibly drawn into the vortex of revolution. The popular leaders who a month previously had publicly defeated Mitchel's war cry, now caught the prevalent passion.

Q. Excited by the revolutionary examples on every side, what did they believe ?

A. That Ireland had but, to "go and do likewise," and the boon of national liberty would be conceded by England, probably without striking a blow.

Q. What now sprung up all over the country ?

A. Confederate "Clubs" sprang up all over the country, and arming and drilling were openly carried on.

Q. What active part did Mitchel's Journal take ?

A Weekly, it labored with fierce energy to hurry the conflict.

Q. To whom did the editor address letters through its pages ?

A. To Lord Clarendon, the Irish Viceroy, styling him "Her Majesty's Executioner General, and General Butcher of Ireland."

Q. What instruction did he give through his paper as to street warfare ?

A. He noted the "Berlin system," and the Milanese system, and highly praised molten lead, and cold vitrol, as good things for citizens, male and female, to fling from windows and house-tops on hostile troops operating below.

Q. Of what was Mitchel well aware ?

A. That the course he was pursuing could not possible be long tolerated.

Q. What were his calculations ?

A. That the government must indeed seize him, but before he could be struck down and his paper be suppressed, he would have rendered revolution inevitable.

Q. For a long time, for what did O'Brien and his friends hope ?

A. That concession and arrangement between the government and Ireland would avert collision. Mitchel, on the other hand, feared nothing more than compromise of any kind.

Q. What was O'Brien's policy ?

A. To proceed soberly upon the model of Washington and the Colonies.

Q. Whose examples did Mitchel desire to follow ?

A. The examples of Louis Blanc and the Boulevards of Paris.

Q. On what did Lord Clarendon determine ?

A. To strike quickly, judging that an outbreak once begun, might have an alarming development.

Q. How did he proceed ?

A. On the 21st of March, O'Brien, Meagher, and

Mitchel were arrested ; the first two were charged with seditious speeches, and the latter with seditious writings.

Q. How did the trials proceed ?

A. The prosecutions against O'Brien and Meagher, on this indictment failed through disagreement of the juries.

Q. Was Mitchel found guilty ?

A. Yes ; and was sentenced to 14 years transportation beyond the seas ?

Q. How did he receive his sentence ?

A. With great composure, addressing the court at the same time, in defiant tones.

Q. What was now the commotion in the Court-House ?

A. Most exciting, a thundering cry ran through the building, a rush was made to embrace him ere they should see him no more.

Q. What did the police in wild dismay, thinking it meant a rescue ?

A. Arms were drawn ; bugles in the street outside sounded the alarm ; troops hurried up from different stations and surrounded the Court-House.

Q. What did the policemen in the interim ?

A. A number of them flung themselves on Mitchel, tore him from the embrace of his excited friends, and hurried him through the wicket that led from the dock to the cells beneath.

Q. How was Mitchel bound ?



A. Scarcely had he been removed from the dock when he was heavily manacled, strong chains passing from his wrists to his ankles.

Q. Thus fettered, whither was he hurriedly taken next morning ?

A. Into a police-van, which was guarded by a troop of dragoons, with sabres drawn. He was carried in haste to the war-sloop "Shearwater" which was waiting at Dublin Quay, to convey him to his destination.

Q. What took place as soon as Mitchel touched the deck war-sloop ?

A. Her paddles were put in motion, she swiftly sped to sea, and in a few hours the hills of Ireland had disappeared from view.

Q. What effects had Mitchel's conviction and departure on the leaders throughout the country ?

A. The news of his conviction and sudden departure, burst like a thunder-clap on the Confederation Clubs, throughout the provinces.

Q. What did their chiefs do ?

A. They scattered themselves through the provinces, traversing the counties from east to west, addressing meetings, inspecting club organizations, inquiring as to armament, and exhorting the people to be ready for the combat.

Q. What course did the government pursue in the meantime ?

A. Troops were poured into the country ; barracks were provisioned, garrisons strengthened

gunboats moved into the rivers, flying camps established ; every military disposition was made for encountering the insurrection.

Q. What did the government now pass ?

A. A bill suspending the *Habeas Corpus* Act.

Q. What was issued ?

A. A proclamation for the arrests of the Confederate leaders was issued, and considerable rewards were offered for their apprehension.

Q. Where was William Smith O'Brien when this news reached him ?

A. At Ballinkeelee, in Wexford County.

Q. What did he do ?

A. He moved rapidly from thence, through Kilkenny into Tipperary, for the purpose of gathering in the latter county a considerable force, with which to march upon Kilkenny city.

Q. Before he could execute his design, what took place ?

A. He and the few hundred of unarmed peasantry who followed him, were surrounded by flying detachments of military.

Q. What took place ?

A. A skirmish took place, the military retreated into a stone-built farm house close by. Situated thus they were able to hold out against ten times their number of military men without artillery.

Q. Did the peasantry storm the house ?

A. Yes ; but it was disastrous. The only means

left was to set it on fire ; for this purpose they brought loads of hay and other combustibles, and arranged them outside the doors.

Q. To whom did the house belong ?

A. To a widow woman, named McCormack whose five children were inside.

Q. What did she do ?

A. She rushed to the Insurgent chief, flung herself on her knees, and asked him if he was going to stain his name and cause by an act so barbarous as the destruction of her little ones.

Q. What did O'Brien order ?

A. He immediately ordered the combustibles to be cleared away, although a deadly fusilade from within was decimating his followers.

Q. What did the insurgents do ?

A. Displeased with the tenderness of feeling in their chief, which they considered out of place on such an occasion, they abandoned the siege and dispersed homeward.

Q. What followed ?

A. O'Brien and a few of his faithful adherents had to flee to the mountains, and take shelter in their defiles.

Q. What was the condition of the country after this outbreak ?

A. Ireland was given over to the gloomy scenes of special commissions, state trials, and death-sentences, in which many a noble and patriotic Son of *Erin* heard his death doom pronounced.

## CHAPTER LXVII.

## The Fate of the Leaders of '48.

Q. What was the fate of the leaders in this abortive insurrection ?

A. O'Brien, Meagher, McManus, and O'Donohue having been convicted of high treason, were condemned to death ; afterwards to be beheaded, disembowled and quartered.

Q. What became of the other leaders ?

A. Martin, and O'Doherty were sentenced to transportation, while Dillon, O'Gorman and Doheny succeeded in accomplishing their escape to America.

Q. Was the year "Forty-eight" disastrous to Ireland ?

A. Yes ; it cost Ireland,—not alone in the sacrifice of some of her best and noblest sons, led to immolate themselves in such desperate enterprise as revolution, but in the terrible reaction, the prostration, the terrorism, the disorganization that ensued. Through many a long and dreary year the country suffered from the delirium of that time.

Q. What young man received a wound at the attack on the farm house aforementioned, whose name was destined to grace the pages of recent Irish history ?

A. James Stephens, then a young Kilkenny engineer student (who was acting as aid to O'Brien)

had his leg fractured and otherwise disabled ; but that bullet missed the life of the future leader and leader and chief of the Fenian Brotherhood.

Q. Were the sentences of death on O'Brien and his companions commuted ?

A. Yes ; in each case to penal servitude beyond the seas, for life.

Q. What took place on the 29th of July, 1849, the first anniversary of the abortive rising ?

A. The war-brig "Swiftsure" sailed from Kingstown harbor, bearing O'Brien, Meagher, McManus and O'Donohue to the convict settlement of Australia.

Q. What is to be remarked of the founders of the Young Ireland party ?

A. Few of them now survive. Nearly all have passed away ; and :—

" Their graves are sever'd far and wide  
By mountain, stream, and sea. "

Q. What were the destinies awaiting these noble and patriotic *Sons of Erin* ?

A. Duffy — now Sir Charles Gavan Duffy, of Melbourne—has been Prime Minister of Victoria, and is perhaps, the ablest and most statesmanlike man at present in public life at the antipodes.

Q. What about Thomas Darcy McGee ?

A. McGee, foully slain by an assassin's bullet at Ottawa in 1868, had also won, as a minister of the Crown in the free self-governed Dominion of Ca-

nada, a notable recognition of his splendid abilities.

Q. What is said of Thomas Francis Meagher ?

A. Meagher, the silver-tongued orator of Young Ireland, after a career full of vicissitudes, was United States governor of Montana Territory when he accidentally perished in the rapids of the Missouri,

Q. And Thomas Osborne Davis ?

A. Davis died early, yet, not before he had filled Ireland with admiration for his genius, and love for his virtues.

Q. When did Dillon die ?

A. John B. Dillon who was a member of parliament for Tipperary County, died in 1866.

Q. What of John Martin and Ronayne ?

A. They are recent losses, having been also parliamentary representatives.

Q. What is said of John Mitchel ?

A. Mitchel, irreconcilable and defiant to the last, returned to Ireland in 1875, and died " in the arms of victory " as " member for Tipperary. "

Q. And William Smith O'Brien the leader of the party ?

A. O'Brien, sleeps in the family mausoleum at Rathronan ; but on the most prominent site in the Irish metropolis, his countrymen have raised a noble statue, to perpetuate his memory.

Q. What is said of Richard O'Gorman ?

A. O'Gorman enjoys in New York, fame and fortune, honorably achieved in the land of his adoption.

Q. Mention a few more of this noble band of Irishmen ?

A. Kevin Izod O'Doherty is a prominent member of the Queensland legislature, Michael Doheny, a man of rare gifts as a writer and speaker, died lately in New York ; Dalton Williams, the gentle bard of many an exquisite lay, reposes in a distant Louisiana grave ; Denis Lane, poet and politician, happily still thinks and feels for Ireland in his pleasant home by the Lee.

Q. What may be furthermore remarked ?

A. That, besides these mentioned, there might be named a goodly company of the less political and more literary type ; as Denis Florence McCarthy, Samuel Ferguson, D. MacNevin, O'Hagan, Mangan, Ingram, Gerald Griffin and a long roll of other illustrious names which space will not permit to note.

---

CHAPTER LXVIII.

Father Mathew.

Q. Who was Father Theobald Mathew ?

A. He was an humble Capuchin monk, known to the world as the great Apostle of Temperance.

Q. With whom was Father Mathew contemporary ?

A. With the great Irish Agitator. "Two Suns," we are told, "do not shine in the one firmament," yet the same period of Irish history beheld side by side with Daniel O'Connell, at the zenith of his fame, his great countryman and contemporary. Theobald Mathew, "the Apostle of Temperance."

Q. Did these two great men embark in the same cause ?

A. No ; in widely different characters, these two lights won eminence and praise. One was a political leader ; the other was a moral reformer. One commanded the allegiance of a party in the State ; the other received the homage of all.

Q. Did Father Mathew limit his labors to his own native country, Ireland ?

A. No ; he travelled through England, Scotland, and America, shedding light and happiness all around him, and administering the total-abstinence pledge to millions.

Q. What does history inform us ?

A. That the whole nation rose at his words, as Christendom answered to the call of Peter the Hermit. It was indeed a "crusade" Father Mathew preached.

Q. What took place when he visited a town or city ?

A. The population for miles round turned out in great numbers. At Limerick so vast was the assemblage that a troop of dragoons passing along the quay got "jammed" in the crowd, and were



literally pushed into the river by the surging of the multitude.

Q. As railways were scarcely known in Ireland in those days, how had he to travel ?

A. By the mail-coach, out of which circumstance a formidable state grievance arose.

Q. In what way did this grievance arise ?

A. If the inhabitants of a town or village happened to hear that the famous Capuchin was a passenger, they waylaid the vehicle — “ stopped her Majesty’s mail, ” and refused to let it proceed till he had administered the pledge to them.

Q. Was Father Mathew only received by the Catholic party ?

A. We was equally so by the Protestant,—the orange and green, strange to say, alike waved a greeting to Father Mathew ; Whig, Tory and Repealer sounded his praise.

Q. What was extended to him in Protestant Ulster ?

A. Nowhere in all Ireland could he have received a welcome more cordial and enthusiastic, than that which was extended to him in Protestant Ulster ?

Q. Of what was he warned by his friends ?

A. Not to carry out his purpose of visiting Ulster ; the Orangemen it was declared, could not stand the sight of a Catholic priest received with public festive display in their midst.

Q. What really happened ?

A. The dreaded Orangemen came out in grand procession, with their flags and banners, to join in the ovation.

Q. What did Father Mathew, rightly appreciating the spirit of the Orange display ?

A. He called for "three cheers" for them! A Catholic clergyman calling for a cordial salutation of the Orange banner, and a Catholic assembly heartily responding, was something almost inconceivable. It had never occurred before in Ireland. I believe it had never occurred since.

Q. When did Father Mathew visit England ?

A. In 1843. He landed at Liverpool, and proceeded by way of Manchester, Leeds, and York to London; stopped a day or two at each place and administered the pledge to thousands.

Q. At London, what was he fated to encounter ?

A. Opposition from the publicans, who did all in their power to break him down, by insult and violence.

Q. What did the publicans do to impede his progress ?

A. For weeks previous to his arrival at the great metropolis, the tap-room loungers and beery-roughs were harangued over the counters about the "Popish Irish priest" who was coming to overthrow their liberties.

Q. What was the result ?

A. The result was that, at more than one place

in the city, on Father Mathew's appearance an infuriated rabble assailed the platform, compelling him to desist or else to administer the pledge under protection of the police.

Q. Was the great Apostle of Temperance, daunted by this opposition ?

A. No ; despite all such opposition he pursued his labors in London.

Q. What had he the satisfaction of knowing before leaving that city ?

A. That he had laid broad and deep the foundations of a great reformation among, at least, his own fellow-country men and co-religionists in the great metropolis.

Q. How was he received by the nobility of England ?

A. During his stay the most flattering eulogiums were poured upon him, by the nobility and gentry of England ?

Q. When did the Apostle of Temperance set out for America ?

A. In the summer of 1848 ; and on the 2nd of July, New York City bade Father Mathew welcome in the name of America.

Q. What did the Municipal Council of the City of New York do ?

A. Accompanied by deputations from various public bodies and societies, they proceeded in a steamer to Staten Island, to conduct Father Ma-

grand  
join in

reciat-

m ! A  
utation  
sembly  
incon-  
Ireland.

and ?  
and pro-  
and York  
eh place

counter ?  
o did all  
sult and

his pro-

the great  
y-roughs  
the " Po-  
verthrow

one place

threw to the Castle Gardens, where his arrival was awaited by one of the largest assemblies ever seen in that famous city ?

Q. What scene did the Bay of New York present on this occasion ?

A. It presented a noble picture to the eye of the stranger ; its broad waters dotted over with ships of every nation, whose flags unfurled to the wind in honor of the illustrious man, who had come to the New World covered with the renown which he had so well earned in the Old.

Q. What was now re-echoed in the breeze ?

A. Strains of music floated in the air, and cheers were heard from many a vessel, as the steamer glided on her way to Staten Island.

Q. On arriving at the Island, what took place ?

A. The Municipal Authorities were introduced to Father Mathew, who was thus welcomed by Alderman Hayes, in the name and on the part of the Common Council of New York.

Q. After exercising his zeal in New York some weeks, what city did he next visit ?

A. The city of Boston, where he was received with every mark of distinction.

Q. How may his tour through the United States be described ?

A. It was a perfect ovation, his success as a temperance advocate complete, and the impetus which he gave to the cause of teetotalism, is sensibly felt even to this day.

**Q.** When did he return to Ireland ?

**A.** In the month of December 1851 ; after an absence of two years and a half.

**Q.** When did Father Mathew die ?

**A.** On the 8th of December, 1856, in the 66th year of his age, and in the 42nd of his ministry, with a sweet but faint smile, he delivered his soul into the Hands of its Creator.

**Q.** After the mortal remains of the Apostle of Temperance were laid in the tomb, what did the citizens of Cork do ?

**A.** They assembled in the public court-house, to consider the most appropriate means, of paying a tribute of respect to his memory.

**Q.** By what spirit was this meeting conducted ?

**A.** By a spirit of harmonious concord, of party and creed. The protestant and the dissenter vied with the catholic, in the eloquent expressions of affection for the man, and veneration for his character ; of sorrow for his loss, and of pride in his citizenship.

**Q.** What was resolved, in obedience to a universal wish, at this meeting ?

**A.** It was resolved that a statue of Father Mathew, in some way typical of his temperance mission, should be erected in one of the public thoroughfares of the city.

**Q.** What is said of his labors ?

**A.** Few men of any age or country, have performed such great services to humanity, and the

cause of morality and religion, as did Father Mathew.

Q. How is his name revered among Christians?

A. With the greatest veneration, and is never mentioned but with blessings, in tens of thousands of happy homes on both sides of the Atlantic.

---

## CHAPTER LXIX.

### The Irish Evictions.

Q. What scourge succeeded the famine in Ireland?

A. The Irish eviction, "Scourge" caused by cruel landlords, which was no less deplorable and certainly more heartless and barbarous.

Q. What does history inform us?

A. That in Ireland from 1847 to 1857 a million of people were "cleared" off the Island by evictions and emigration.

Q. How were these evictions accomplished?

A. The houses were thrown down, the anger of the elements afforded no warrant for respite or reprieve; in hail or thunder, rain or snow, out the inmates must go.

Q. Was there any regard for the aged or infirm?

A. None; the bedridden grandsire, the infant in the cradle, the sick, the aged and the dying, were alike thrust forth and no roof to shelter

them, from the inclemency of the weather, but the stormy sky.

Q. May not this be, but, a fancy sketch ?

A. No ; it is but a brief and simple outline sketch of realities witnessed all over Ireland, during the ten years that followed the famine.

Q. How does the Most Rev. Dr. McNulty describe one of those harrowing scenes, which occurred but a few years since in the County Meath ?

A. " Seven hundred human beings, " says Dr. McNulty, " were driven from their homes on this one day. There was not a shilling of rent due on the estate at that time except by one man.

Q. What else does the Bishop say ?

A. " The sheriff's assistants employed on the occasion, to extinguish the hearths and demolish the homes of those honest, industrious men, worked away with a will at their awful calling until sunset ; when an incident occurred that varied the monotony of the grim and ghastly ruin, which they were spreading all around. "

Q. Relate the incident ?

A. " The men stopped suddenly and recoiled, panic-stricken with terror, when they had learned that typhus fever held in its grasp, two of the houses which they were directed to destroy, and had already brought death to some of their inmates. "

Q. What did the men implore ?

A. " They implored the agent to spare these

houses a little longer ; but he was inexorable, and insisted that they should come down. ”

Q. What did the heartless agent order ?

A. “ He ordered a large winnowing sheet to be placed over the beds, in which the fever victims lay, and then directed the houses to be unroofed cautiously and slowly. ”

Q. How does the Rev. Dr. proceed ?

A. “ I administered, says he, the last sacraments of the church to four of these fever-stricken victims next day, and, save the above-mentioned winnowing sheet, there was not then a roof nearer to me than the canopy of heaven. ”

Q. What did the Bishop say, could never be effaced from his mind ?

A. The scene of that eviction day, “ says he ” “ can never be effaced from my mind. The wailing of women, the screams, the terror, the consternation of children, the speechless agony of men, wrung tears of grief from all who saw them. ”

Q. Was this demolition of houses carried on to a great extent ?

A. To such an extent that, hand-labor became too slow in the work of house-levelling, and accordingly scientific improvement, and mechanical ingenuity were called into action.

Q. How were these house-levellers designated ?

A. The “ Crowbar Brigade, ” a name of evil memory, at mention of which, to this day, many an Irish peasant’s heart will chill.



## CHAPTER LXX.

## The Fenian Brotherhood.

Q. What association started in 1858 ?

A. The Fenian Brotherhood, organized by Mr. James Stephens.

Q. What was the object of this association ?

A. To free Ireland from English misrule.

Q. What was established at this time in the town of Skibbereen ?

A. A political club or reading-room, called the Phoenix National and Literary Society.

Q. Who was the most prominent among its members ?

A. Jeremiah O'Donovan Rossa ; and with him Stephens soon became acquainted.

Q. Did O'Donovan Rossa, enter into Stephens's views ?

A. Yes ; for nothing could possibly have been more to the heart of Rossa than this enterprise, and in a few weeks, out of one hundred young men on the books of the "Literary Society," ninety had been sworn into the Fenian Brotherhood. Such was the start of Fenianism.

Q. What was issued on the 3rd of December by government ?

A. A proclamation ; and in a few days after a simultaneous raid was made upon the Phoenix men in Skibbereen, Bantry, Kenmare, and Kilkenny.

Q. On what was the government determined ?

A. To treat the affair in a very serious spirit, hence, in Cork and Kerry scores of persons were in prison awaiting their trials.

Q. To what did the easy suppression of the Phoenix conspiracy in 1858, lead ?

A. It led to many false conclusions. Every one assumed that there was an end of the affair. The prisoners were discharged.

Q. How was the failure of the "Phoenix" attempt in Ireland regarded by the American organizers ?

A. As merely the misfire of a first cartridge. They would lie still for a while, and go to work again.

Q. By whom was the Fenian movement directed on the American side ?

A. By John O'Mahony, Michael Doheny and Colonel Coreoran, the first-named being chief or principal leader.

Q. Who was the Head Centre in New York ?

A. Mr. John Mahony, and he designated his branch of the organization by the name "Fenian"

Q. Why did he give it that name ?

A. Because the Irish militia seventeen centuries ago were called the "Fiana Erion," or Fenians, from Fenius, their famous commander.

Q. What name did Stephens, however, prefer for the home section ?

A. He preferred the title "Irish Revolutionary Brotherhood ;" shortened into, "the I. R. B."

Q. What was the authority exercised by Mr. Stephens, in the Home organization ?

A. It was supreme and absolute. His official title was the "C. O. I. R.," or Central Organizer of the Irish Republic.

Q. What did the Irish-American press now take up ?

A. The cause of Irish nationality.

Q. Did it require strong words to arouse the ire of their readers against England ?

A. No; the Irish in America—the maddened fugitives of the dreadful famine and eviction times—hated the British power with quenchless hate.

Q. From whence did the greatest obstacle arise to the Fenian leaders ?

A. From the Catholic Church, which condemns oath-bound secret societies.

Q. As the Fenian enrollment was going on in 1861, what broke out in America ?

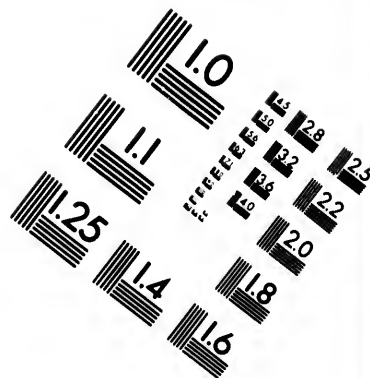
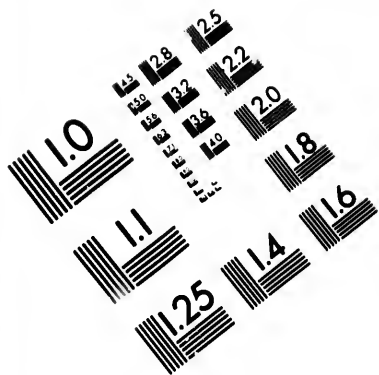
A. Civil war burst forth. The people North and South sprang to arms.

Q. What part did Irishmen take in the action ?

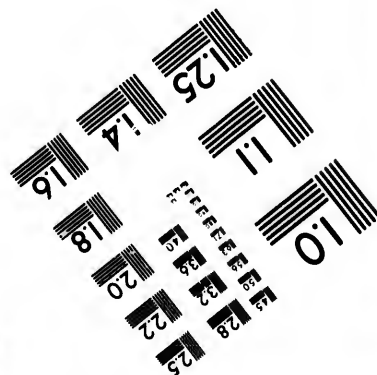
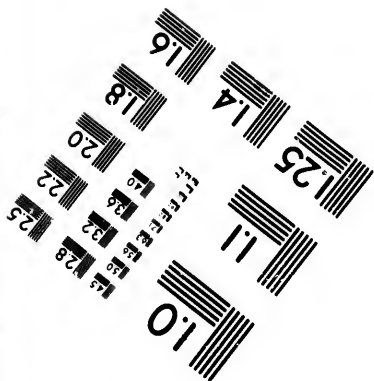
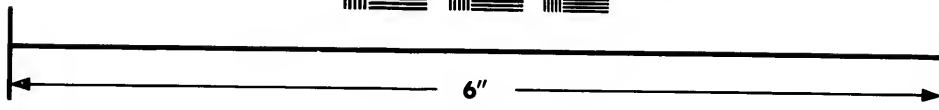
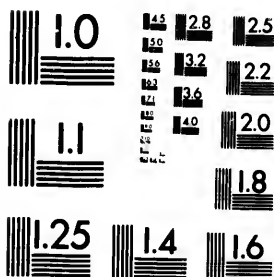
A. Irishmen were foremost in "going with their States". An Irish Brigade fought on each side. One led by General Patrick Cleburne, distinguished itself under the Confederate flag. One commanded by General T. F. Meagher, won laurels, that will not fade, beneath the Starry banner of the Union.

Q. What were broken up ?





**IMAGE EVALUATION  
TEST TARGET (MT-3)**



**Photographic  
Sciences  
Corporation**

23 WEST MAIN STREET  
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580  
(716) 872-4503

15 28  
22 25  
32  
36 22  
40  
48

10  
10

A. In this rush to the field, the Fenian circles were broken up and abandoned on all sides. But this was only for a time, soon a new and stronger impulse came to press them on.

Q. During the American civil war, what seemed inevitable ?

A. A rupture seemed inevitable between the Washington government and the Court of St. James ; on account of the readiness with which England conceded belligerent rights to the seceding States.

Q. What effect had this impression upon the Irish ?

A. A powerful one, and it was sedulously encouraged in the Northern States and in Ireland, as an incentive to the Irish to join the Federal regiments.

Q. What story was almost universally believed ?

A. That Secretary Seward had as good as promised certain Irish leaders, that, when the Union was restored, America would settle accounts with John Bull, and that Ireland would be gratefully repaid for her aid to the Stars and Stripes. This was the crowning stroke of good fortune for the Fenian leaders.

Q. What took place on the 7th of April, 1865 ?

A. General Lee surrendered, Richmond fell, and the American war was closed.

Q. What followed ?

A. The disbandment of the Federal armies. The Irish regiments were then free.

Q. What did hundreds of daring and skilful officers, spoiled for peaceful pursuits, look for ?

A. For some sympathetic cause in which they might continue their warlike career.

Q. What did the Fenian leaders now feel ?

A. That the hour for action had arrived.

Q. What were daily imported from America ?

A. Arms were imported and distributed among the circles in Ireland.

Q. What did every steamer from America bring ?

A. A number of officers, among the earliest being Brigadier-General T. F. Millen, who took up his head-quarters in Dublin, as chief in command.

Q. Who came from the continent ?

A. General Cluseret and General Fariola, the former of whom was heard of subsequently, in the struggle of the Commune in Paris.

Q. What was detrimental to the Fenian cause ?

A. The great amount of publicity about the secret movements of the society. Everyone knew what was at hand.

Q. Who was Pierce Nagle ?

A. He was one of the staff on the *Irish People*, and a great favorite and confidential agent or courier of Mr. Stephens.

Q. What is said of Nagle ?

A. He was in the secret pay of the English gov-



ernment, and was supplying deadly information against the Fenian chiefs.

Q. What step did the government take ?

A. The Irish people, newspaper, was suppressed the office seized, and T. C. Luby, J. O'Leary and O'Donovan Rossa were arrested.

Q. Before sun-rise next morning what was effected ?

A. With the exception of Stephens himself and three others, the government had in their grasp every man of prominence connected with the Irish branch of the Brotherhood.

---

## CHAPTER LXXI.

### The Arrest of James Stephens.—His Trial and Escape.

Q. When was Stephens arrested ?

A. On the 10th of November, 1865, and with him were taken C. J. Kickham, H. Brophy, and E. Duffy ; the latter was the life and soul of the Fenian movement west of the Shannon.

Q. Before whom were they arraigned on the following day ?

A. Before the magistrate in lower Castle yard Dublin.

Q. How was the van guarded which conveyed them thither ?

A. By a mounted escort with drawn sabres, and

preceded and followed by a number of cars, conveying policemen armed with cutlass and revolver.

Q. Previous to committing the prisoners, what did the magistrate ask ?

A. He asked each, if he had any observations to make, to which Stephens answered, and said he had.

Q. What did the magistrate remark ?

A. "I shall be bound to take it down."—"Yes, take it down," cried Stephens.

Q. What did Stephens on the instant ?

A. Rising to his feet and folding his arms, he said, "I have employed no lawyer in this case, because in making a defense of any kind I would be recognizing British law in Ireland."

Q. How did he continue ?

A. "Now I deliberately and conscientiously, he continued, repudiate the existence of that law in Ireland, its rights, or even its existence, in Ireland.

Q. What defiant expression did he make use of ?

A. "I defy and despise, he says, any punishment the law can inflict upon me. I have spoken it".

Q. What did these words mean ?

A. Ten days subsequently these words were recalled, with a full perception of their import, "Stephens has escaped !"

Q. Where were Stephens and his companions confined ?

A. In Richmond prison. This was one of the

strongest prisons in Ireland; but vain were all bolts and bars, iron doors and grated windows, to hold Stephens in that prison.

Q. What previous precautions were taken, in anticipation of such a possibility as that which had occurred?

A. Some of the prison officers, had long previously been secretly secured as sworn members, of the Fenian Brotherhood.

Q. Who were the two prison officers, who planned Stephens escape?

A. J. Breslin, the hospital superintendent, and one Byrne who was the night-watchman.

Q. How did they accomplish their work?

A. On a very stormy night, they unlocked his cell and led him out to the boundary wall of the prison, over which they let him by means of rope-ladders, his friends were on the other side awaiting him.

Q. What measures did the government authorities take, being thrown into dismay and confusion, on the news of his escape?

A. Cavalry scoured the country all around, police scattered over the city, especially in suspected neighborhoods, ransacked houses, tore down wainscoting, ripped up flooring, searched garrets, cellars and coal-holes, but Stephens could not be captured.

Q. To where were telegrams flying?

A. Telegrams were flying all over the kingdom;

steamers were stopped and the passengers examined.

Q. What put to sea ?

A. Gunboats put to sea and overhauled and searched fishing-smacks and coasters.

Q. What appeared all over the kingdom ?

A. Flaming placards appeared with " One thousand Pounds Reward " in large letters announcing the escape, and offering a high price for the lost one.

Q. Where was Stephens " C. O. I. R. ", all this time ?

A. He was all this time, and for a long period subsequently, secreted in the house of a Mrs. Butler of Summer Hill, a woman of humble means.

Q. Was she faithful to the trust confided to her charge ?

A. Yes ; though she could earn £1,000 by giving merely a hint to the authorities of his whereabouts ; but Stephens confided himself implicitly into her hands, and he was not deceived.

Q. To where did Stephens go three months afterwards ?

A. He went to France.

Q. After he had remained a short time in France, whither did he proceed ?

A. To America, and sought to bring the sundered sections of the Brotherhood there, under his own sole authority.

Q. What did he find to his surprise ?

A. He found but few willing to constitute him a dictator, and this he would be or nothing.

Q. What did the more resolute and influential Fenian party in the States, do ?

A. They discarded him altogether, and, on the policy of "striking England where they could," attempted the daring design of an invasion of Canada.

Q. Were they successful in the attempt ?

A. So far as they went, they were successful, but they were at length frustrated by the interference of the American government.

Q. Was there a rising in Ireland ?

A. Yes ; the Fenian circles of Cork, Tipperary, Dublin, Louth, Limerick, Clare, and Waterford, took the field ; but the government being made acquainted with the affair, through the traitor J. Córdon, crushed it in its birth.

Q. After the Fenian troubles had a little subsided, what was talked of ?

A. The disestablishment of the Irish Protestant Church.

Q. By whom was a bill brought into parliament to that effect ?

A. By Mr. Gladstone, March 1st, 1869.

Q. When was the bill passed ?

A. July 12th, and received the royal sanction July 26th the same year.

---

## CHAPTER LXXII.

## Home Rule.

Q. What was held in Dublin, May 19th, 1870 ?

A. The first Home Rule meeting.

Q. Was the meeting a public one ?

A. No ; it was a private meeting of some of the leading merchants, and professional men of the metropolis, of various political and religious opinions, to exchange views upon the condition of Ireland.

Q. What remarkable person was present at this meeting ?

A. Sir Isaac Butt, an eminent lawyer and statesman, who was destined to be the leader of the Home Rule party.

Q. What did Mr. Butt propose at this meeting ?

A. " That it is the opinion of this meeting, that the true remedy for the evils of Ireland is the establishment of an Irish parliament, with full control over our domestic affairs. "

Q. What was the effect when the chairman put it before the meeting ?

A. It was unanimously passed without a dissenting voice. This was the birth of the Irish Home Rule movement.

Q. What was the progress of the new movement ?

A. It made steady progress. The popular sentiment went at once with the Association.

Q. What gave striking proofs of the depth and force of the national feeling ?

A. The elections which occurred in 1871. These were the returns of several Home Rulers as members of parliament, among them Mr. Butt, for Limerick.

Q. In 1873, what did the Council of the Home Government Association call ?

A. A National conference to consider the question of Home Rule.

Q. When did the conference assemble ?

A. November 18th, 1873, at the Rotunda, Dublin.

Q. What was now established ?

A. The Irish Home Rule League, to take charge of the national movement.

Q. Who was appointed leader of the Home Rule League ?

A. Sir Isaac Butt.

Q. What is to be thought of the " Home Rule " policy ?

A. It is probably the best at present ; for, when Home Rule is once obtained, all else will follow if desirable.

Q. What irreparable loss did the Home Rule League sustain in May, 1879 ?

A. The death of its leader Sir Isaac Butt, which took place in Dublin.

Q. What plan have some of the Home Rulers pursued during the late sessions of parliament ?

A. The plan of obstruction.

Q. What Irish members distinguished themselves in the English parliament as "Obstructionists" during the sessions of 1879-80 ?

A. Charles S. Parnell, F. O'Donnell, J. G. Biggar, J. O'Connor Power and A. M. Sullivan.

Q. What object had these gentlemen in view in obstructing "Parliamentary Bills" ?

A. To further the cause of Home Rule which they believe to be Ireland's right.

Q. To what does *obstruction* owe its being ?

A. Solely to the persistent refusal, of a hostile cast-iron majority of the English Commons to entertain any—even the most reasonable—measure for the redress of Irish grievances ?

Q. For what are the leaders of the Home Rule distinguished ?

A. For their oratorical powers, statesmanlike endowments, and brilliant parliamentary debates.

Q. What did the *London Times* remark not long since in speaking of P. S. Smythe, M. P. for Westmeath ?

A. "The House of Commons had begun to forget what oratory was, until Mr. Smythe made his famous speech of last night. The same flattering compliment might, with equal justice, be paid to O'Donnell, Maguire, O'Connor Power and others, whose splendid parts do honor to the cause of Irish nationalism.

Q. What does Ireland ask for ?

A. For a parliament of her own, as she had in



time past, and maintains that it is neither just nor reasonable, that the laws for Ireland should be made in London, instead of in Dublin.

Q. If Ireland had her own parliament, what would be the result ?

A. Her resources would be developed and diversified; manufactures and commerce would start into existence, and the suffering which follows each partial failure of crop would be averted.

Q. But, under the present English policy, with what must Ireland be content ?

A. She must, as during the famine years of 1846-49, be content to see, every day, scores of steamships and sailing vessels, laden with provisions leave her ports, while her people are famishing by the wayside.

Q. What is said of the soil of Ireland ?

A. Ireland has an uncommonly fertile soil ; it is rich in minerals, containing gold, silver copper, lead, coal, and sulphur ; its quarries yield the most beautiful marble and excellent slates, while its lakes and rivers abound with every variety of edible fish.

Q. Are the Irish peasantry industrious ?

A. The Irish peasantry are noted for their laborious industry ; but under the present feudal land-system, they are not allowed to enjoy the fruits of their industry.

Q. Why so ?

A. Because they are subjected to a burdensome

tax on it, in the form of a periodical raising of the rent for every improvement they make; and if they protest against this injustice they are liable to be forthwith dispossessed of their farms.

Q. What remark did John Bright make, while delivering a speech at Birmingham in February, 1876?

A. He remarked that the whole of Ireland was owned by six thousand persons.

Q. What is the area of Ireland?

A. The area of Ireland is over twenty million (20,157,557) acres, of which about thirteen millions are under cultivation. Half of the entire island is "owned" by five hundred men and women, who hold it simply by the title of the robber, maintained by British bayonets, whilst five and a quarter millions of human beings in the country own not a rood.

Q. What does Mr. Froude acknowledge?

A. He candidly acknowledges, that, "the landlords in Ireland represent, conquest and confiscation, and that they have gone on with an indifference to the welfare of the people, that would never be tolerated in England or Scotland."

Q. What effect has landlord tyranny on the welfare of the people?

A. It paralyzes the energies of the cultivator, by placing a crushing tax on his slightest effort towards improvement, and *his* poverty necessarily impoverishes the laborer and mechanic, depresses

the merchant, excludes enterprise—in a word emasculates the country.

Q. What does the Irish tenant see ?

A. He sees, after years of ceaseless toil and privation, the fruit of all his efforts mercilessly devoured by landlord and tax-gatherer.

Q. What becomes of Irish rents ? Do not these moneys return to the people through the regular channels of trade ?

A. In no manner ; they have an entirely different destination. They go abroad for expensive luxuries to England ; they meet the demands of fashion and aristocratic dissipation in London ; they enrich race courses, gambling dens, and other haunts of gilded vice.

Q. Is this the case with regard to other countries ?

A. No ; in every other known country the main portion of rents and taxes is spent where they are collected, and thus circulates back again to the producer. But Ireland pours her wealth into an accursed bottomless pit. Is it any wonder that “ a deep sense of wrong ” “ a sullen discontent,” broods over the face of such a land.

Q. What are we told by O'Neill Daunt in his letter to John Bright ?

A. “ The wealth which God has bestowed on Ireland for the support of her inhabitants, is actually carried off by England, and the people by whose labor it was produced, and among whom, if

the island were self-governed, it would circulate in a thousand reproductive channels, are forced to fly to the ends of the earth in search of subsistence."

---

## CHAPTER LXXIII.

### The National Land League.

Q. What is the great question which now agitates Ireland ?

A. The land question, in the interest of which, some of the principal political men of Ireland, have formed themselves into a "National Land League."

Q. Who is the President of the League ?

A. Mr. Charles S. Parnell.

Q. To what are the Irish leaders applying themselves with zeal ?

A. The defence of the peasantry against a system of organized robbery, practised by a pseudo-feudal aristocracy under cover of the most immoral, and the most perverse "Land Code" in the world.

Q. What, then, is this land question ?

A. It is simply this, that, the cultivators of the soil demand security of tenure in their farms, as long as they pay a fair rent ; so that they will not be evicted at the whimsical notion of the landlord,

and cast with their families upon the roadside to perish of hunger and cold.

Q. Were there any cases of those inhuman evictions brought before the public lately ?

A. Yes, several in the west of Ireland, where families have been flung out like wild beasts, their hearthstones quenched, their roofs levelled, without a penny of compensation for the toil and sweat which had fertilized their little farms.

Q. What is certain ?

A. That no other country in the world presents so pitiful a spectacle. The organized iniquity of Irish landlordism surpasses even that of the old seignorial system in France, whose fruits were plucked in the whirlwind of the Revolution.

Q. Have the Irish tenants to suffer much at the hands of their landlords ?

A. We cannot measure or conceive the agony endured by a people which, in addition to every other calamity, is condemned to " forced labor and forced tribute, " under such tyrannical and inhuman masters " as the Irish landlords. " Where among the despotisms of Asia can be found so horrible a mockery of government.

Q. What did Chief Justice Pennefather say of the land code in 1844 ?

A. He declared in open court that, there was no clause in the land code sanctioning the interest of the tenant ; every line had for its object the inter-

est of the landlord, and to enforce the payment of rent.

Q. What else did this learned Judge say ?

A. That " From the first to the last of the eighty-seven enactments on the Statute-Book, touching the land, there was no sign that the interest of the tenant ever entered into the contemplation of the legislator. "

Q. Describe the merits of this abominable " land code ? "

A. This land code elaborated, by the great landed proprietors to the most refined perfection, keen, subtle, and fraudulent in every part, nothing could be devised by fiendish ingenuity to fleece closer, or cut the pound of flesh " nearer to the heart " It is radically vicious.

Q. What does it involve ?

A. It involves a glaring violation of equality—a standing outrage on human rights, from which natural conscience revolts.

Q. Do the Irish tenants suffer still at the hands of those greedy and tyrannical landlords ?

A. They do ; and the state of affairs in Ireland the present year, 1880, is of the gravest and most disastrous character.

Q. Why so ?

A. Because its features are profound misery, mental uneasiness, protests by public meetings, marching and counter-marching of soldiers and police, the arrests and imprisonment of popular

Irish leaders—in a word, all the symptoms of distress, discontent and repression by brute force.

Q. What seems to have overreached the bounds of endurance ?

A. The rapacious hands of landlordism grasping at too much, have overreached the bounds of human endurance.

Q. What stand have the Irish taken ?

A. Patience has at length become exhausted, and a firm determination to right themselves has seized the entire population.

Q. What have some of the leading politicians in England recognized at last ?

A. The danger of steeling the hearts of the people against the state, and the consequence is that they have pledged themselves, to aid in erasing from the Statute-Book the inhuman code that has so long disgraced its pages.

Q. What is the opinion of Mr. John Stuart Mill on self-government ?

A. This wise legislator tells us, that "every civilized country is entitled to settle its internal affairs in its own way ; and no other country ought to interfere with its discretion, because one country, even with the best intention, has no chance of properly understanding the internal affairs of another."

Q. The London *Times* referring to Italy, in 1860, what principles did it lay down ?

A. "That government should be for the good of

the governed, and that whenever rulers wilfully and persistently postpone the good of their subjects, the people have a right to throw off the yoke."

Q. What else does this British Organ tell us?

A. "The destiny of a nation ought to be determined, not by the opinions of other nations, but by the opinion of the nation itself." [*Ireland excepted, whose destiny must be determined by English opinion.*]

Q. How does the writer continue?

A. "To decide," he continues, "whether they are well governed or not, or, rather, whether the degree of extortion, corruption, and cruelty to which they are subject is, sufficient to justify armed resistance, is for those who live under that government—not for those who, being exempt from its oppression, feel a sentimental or a theological interest in its continuance." [*Ireland of course excepted.*]

Q. What, did the writer of the foregoing political dogmas, in his zeal on bombarding the Vatican, quite overlook?

A. He quite overlooked the possible recoil of his heavy artillery, and consequently must have felt a sort of sheepish sensation creep over him when he woke, to realize that he had been effectively demolishing the bulwarks of British domination in Ireland. Had he written in a more collected mood, he would have somehow modified his teaching as suggested by the words I have added in brackets.



Q. What is a fundamental *axiom* of the British Constitution ?

A. That violence on the one hand justifies resistance on the other ; but, if any body dared to hint that the aforesaid fundamental axiom, ought to hold good twenty leagues westward from the Isle of Man, his audacity would soon land him in a British dungeon.

Q. What, then, is the glorious British Constitution, which spreads its protecting and civilizing influence over the empire ?

A. Nobody can tell precisely what it is. It is nowhere written or graven, but is a vague, impalpable agglomeration of customs, usages, precedents, legal decisions, with *Magna Charta* tied as a wrapper about the bundle.

Q. What are Irishmen told by their English brethren ?

A. If you recline beneath the shadow of this glorious *Constitution*, what more do you want—even though several famous Englishmen have rather savagely proclaimed it a *sham*.

Q. What did Lord Brougham say of this “ paladium ” of popular English rights ?

A. He said it was “ one lawyer’s guess at the opinion of another. ”

Q. What has Sir Charles Dilke said of it ?

A. He has said that it was “ a plausible excuse whereby the rich were enabled to rob the poor. ”

Q. What has John Bright to say about the glorious British Constitution ?

A. He tells us that " the whole system of the English government, is one of out-door relief on a gigantic scale for the members, the relations, and the friends of the aristocracy. "

Q. Does not England pretend to say that Ireland is constitutionally governed ?

A. Yes ; but the pretense is a brazen fraud and a falsehood. Ireland is governed solely by bayonets and martial law ; she has never been governed otherwise by England ; she is governed by cartloads of blank warrants (*lettres-de-cachet*) prepared in Dublin Castle, and by the sweet wills of landlord and policeman.

Q. Have not the Irish the privilege of voting as freemen ?

A. Yes ; a fraction of them enjoys the barren privilege of voting for members, " to represent " them in the alien coercion-factory, where such of these members as remain true to their pléges amuse the assembly, by dashing their eloquence and political logic against a wall of immovable arrogance and prejudice.

Q. By what powers is Ireland ruled ?

A. By two thousand garrisons of military police, with detachments of soldiery in reserve at strategic centres. These are the powers that uphold and administer " the law " in Ireland.

Q. What did John Mitchel say in 1875, with regard to the law in Ireland ?

A. " Literally and seriously, says the historian, there is no law in Ireland. The only law in Ireland lies in the suspension of all laws."

Q. What protection, then, has an Irishman under the shadow of the British Constitution ?

A. None, whatever; he is liable to be arrested at any moment on suspicion, flung into prison without trial or warrant, and left there during the Lord-Lieutenant's pleasure.

Q. What, then, is the government of Ireland ?

A. It is a British engine which grinds down ninety-five per cent of the population, while greasing its own wheels and fattening the remaining five per cent.

Q. By what was Ireland visited in 1879 ?

A. By another famine, though not as general as '48, yet, it called for the charitable assistance of the world.

---

#### CHAPTER LXXIV.

**Charles S. Parnell visits America.—His reception.**

Q. When did Mr. Parnell visit America ?

A. In January 1880, accompanied by Mr. John Dillon.

Q. What was the object of Mr. Parnell's visit to the New World ?

A. To lay before the American people the sufferings of his country, through English misgovernment, and to solicit both their aid and sympathy in behalf of his famishing countrymen, who are trodden down by landlord oppression.

Q. What do Mr. Parnell and his co-patriots aim at ?

A. The establishing of a peasant proprietary, by the transfer of the ownership of the land from the class called landlords, to the tillers of the soil themselves.

Q. What was the reception accorded to Messrs. Parnell and Dillon on their arrival at New York ?

A. It was the most cordial and enthusiastic. A large delegation of the most prominent citizens of New York received the Irish envoys, and warmly welcomed them to the free soil of Columbia's land.

Q. What was held in Madison Square the day after their arrival ?

A. A grand mass meeting where over six thousand people assembled, to hear the renowned Irish agitator discuss on Irish affairs. Here Mr. Parnell presented Ireland's cause in its true colors.

Q. What resolutions were adopted at this meeting ?

A. Resolutions expressing confidence in Messrs. Parnell and Dillon, and sympathy for the sufferers in Ireland, favoring the peasant proprietary, and announcing that subscription lists would be immediately opened.

Q. How were Messrs. Parnell and Dillon received in Boston ?

A. A splendid reception was extended by the citizens of Boston, to the representatives of Ireland. The demonstration at the Music Hall, was one of the grandest receptions, accorded to the Irish envoys since their arrival on the American Continent. The large hall was packed to overflowing by an enthusiastic and appreciative audience, composed of all classes of society.

Q. How was the hall decorated ?

A. The hall presented a beautiful appearance dressed in elegant floral decorations. In front of the speaker's desk there was a magnificent harp, flanked on either hand by a vase of beautiful flowers. Smilax and climbing ferns were entwined around the chandeliers over the platform, and from these depended graceful globes of flowers. Along the front of the stage were arranged centry plants, cactuses and various kinds of palms, while in the rear was a fine display of tropical plants.

Q. How did the stage appear ?

A. On the platform were placed over a hundred and fifty chairs, all of which were occupied by prominent citizens of Boston and other New England cities, together with the Presidents of the various Irish Catholic societies in Boston.

Q. Who filled the chair ?

A. His worship Mayor Prince, who in an eloquent but most pathetic speech, told his hearers of the

sorrows and sufferings, the wrongs and the troubles of Ireland, and exhorted them to feel for her afflicted children.

**Q. How was Mr. Parnell received in the United States Congress ?**

**A. His reception by the House of Representatives was of the most flattering nature. The House appropriated the sum of \$300,000 for the relief of the suffering people of Ireland.**

**Q. How was Parnell received in Cincinnati ?**

**A. The Queen city of the west, officially welcomed the representative of Ireland by a magnificent ovation. A large procession consisting of the various societies, military companies and bands of music being interspersed, preceded the carriages containing Mayor Jacob. Hon. Julius Reis and Hon B. Eggleston, who on behalf of both branches of the city government, formally tendered the hospitality of the city to the distinguished visitor.**

**Q. What took place on their arrival at the Music Hall ?**

**A. His worship Mayor Jacob introduced Mr. Parnell in a short but eloquent speech, and the appearance of that gentleman was the occasion for a long, long continued cheer, clapping of hands, waving of handkerchiefs, and the raising up of hats, all making a grand ovation, such as is rarely witnessed.**

**Q. How was Mr. Parnell received in Louisville, Kentucky ?**

A. By a hearty "*Oead mille failthe,*" he addressed the Legislature in Session by special invitation. Kentucky has paid a noble tribute to the Irish cause, doing all, even to Legislative honors, to manifest the feelings of its citizens in this struggle of the Irish people.

Q. What did the *Courier-Journal* of Louisville remark in an editorial, on Mr. Parnell's landing on American soil ?

A. "The English government." says the *Journal*, "is to-day the worst that exists on earth. That nation hates America, let the reception of the Irish representative the grandson of an American Commodore, who made the British trail their flag many and many a time—be cordial, spontaneous and substantial."

Q. How does the writer continue ?

A. "The only way to help Ireland is to stand by Ireland." You may be sure, he continues ; we have made Mr. Parnell's reception "cordial, spontaneous and substantial."

You bet he was cordially greeted and treated,  
 Applauded and feted from hill-top to dell ;  
 And we gave of our store (to talk Irish) *galore,*  
 And, what's more, with a heart-and-a-half to  
 [Parnell !

Q. How was Mr. Parnell received in Chicago ?

A. By the greatest demonstration of the age—fifty thousand people were seeking admittance into

the hall, where he was to lecture on the wrongs of Ireland.

Q. What does the *Chicago Times* say of Parnell's reception in that city ?

A. "Chicago takes the first place again. Her reception of Grant satisfied all competitors, but that was a free show. Her reception of Parnell and Dillon, the Irish agitators, at the Exposition Building on last night, eclipsed anything of the kind ever seen on this continent. This is particularly significant when the price of admission was one dollar."

Q. How does the writer continue ?

A. "It was an exhibition of genuine patriotism of which every Irish-American may well be proud. It was a demonstration of the public spirit of Chicago and the northwest of which all American citizens, native and adopted, may be exceedingly proud. It was an assurance of popular approval which may well make the apostles of Irish land-reform feel assured that America, represented by one of her greatest cities, is ever on the side of the oppressed, no matter what may be her diplomatic relations with the oppressors."

Q. What was the excitement when Parnell and Dillon entered the great hall, escorted by the 2nd. Illinois regiment of infantry ?

A. "The roars of applause, says the *Times*, were like a rushing terror of a tornado; men roared themselves hoarse, and woman, overcome by



conflicting emotions, were carried out in numbers fainting from excitement ; yet, the mass of the fair waved their handkerchiefs and showed quite as much stalwart enthusiasm, as did their male compatriots. ”

Q. Who occupied the chair ?

A. “ Governor Cullom. The platform presented a most imposing sight, being thronged with vice-presidents and distinguished visitors from abroad. Looking from it down into the body of the gigantic hall and up into the thronged galleries, it seemed as if all Chicago must have been compressed into that fiery ocean of humanity, whose eyes, for the most part, shot lightnings of wrath when the conduct of Great Britain toward Ireland, was the subject of some eloquent and dashing period. ”

Q. How was Mr. Parnell received in the other great cities of the United States ?

A. He was officially received by the chief magistrates, who tendered him the freedom of their cities, the citizens everywhere turned out in processions led by military regiments, headed by bands of music who filled the air with charming melody. Assembly Rooms and Representative Halls were thrown open for his reception, where the talent, the beauty, and the chivalry of Young America stood side by side in tens of thousands, to hear the renowned Irish Agitator tell the history of Ireland's wrongs at the hands of perfidious England.

Q. How may his tour through the United States be described ?

A. It was a grand triumphant career. A cordial welcome had been tendered him everywhere; the enthusiasm and unanimity of which reflect honor on the American people, and must exercise, eventually, no mean influence in favor of the cause which Mr. Parnell and his co-laborers so patriotically, and still more, so humanely advocate.

Q. Was it only by enthusiastic greetings and popular demonstrations, the American people manifested their sympathy for suffering Ireland ?

A. No ; they also responded nobly to the call of distress, and by their princely contributions to the Relief Funds, testified their feelings for the famine-stricken peasantry of Ireland.

Q. When did Mr. Parnell visit Canada ?

A. In the month of March, 1880.

Q. What was his reception in Montreal ?

A. It was a significant and unparalleled demonstration. A general outpouring of Celtic enthusiasm and patriotism. A committee of Reception met him at the depot, extended to him the hand of brotherly love and cordially welcomed him to the metropolis of Canada. He was then escorted to the Windsor Hotel preceded by a grand procession, accompanied by several bands of music, who enlivened the scene by their excellent execution of the national airs of Erin. One of the most remarkable features of the procession was, a body of horse-

men who served as a guard of honor to the Irish patriot.

Q. What was his reception the following evening at the Theatre Royal ?

A. "Never," says the *Montreal Post*, "did the Theatre Royal contain such an enthusiastic audience as it did on Tuesday night, 9th inst. (Parnell's reception.)— It seemed to be filled with electricity, with that enobling electricity, which at times, and especially during historical crisis, seems, no one knowing how or why, to pervade the minds of even the most callous-hearted men, and make them feel like patriots."

Q. How does the writer continue ?

A. "The audience was large and respectable, and the platform was crowded with representative men. The presidents of the Irish societies were arrayed in their official robes, and the pupils of Brother Arnold's Academy were dressed in their beautiful *regalia* of green and gold." Wilson's Band composed the orchestra.

Q. By whom was the address of welcome read ?

A. By the Hon. Mr. Beaudry, when the Chairman, Mr. F. B. McNamee, made a few appropriate remarks and introduced the speaker of the evening, Mr. Charles S. Parnell.

Q. What was the effect of Mr. Parnell's appearance ?

A. When Mr. Parnell rose to speak the greeting of the audience was something indescribable. They

rose *en masse* and cheered to the echo, while the ladies waved their handkerchiefs, and in their way were just as demonstrative as the sterner sex.

Q. What gentlemen addressed the assemblage during the evening ?

A. Brilliant speeches were made by Messrs. Curran, Healy, O'Leary and Cloran ; and resolutions were passed, expressive of the heartfelt approval of the course adopted by M. Parnell and his colleagues, in their patriotic struggle for Home Rule.

Q. What was a very impressive part of the performance ?

A. Perhaps the most impressive part of the performance of this memorable evening was, the singing of the Irish National Anthem—"God Save Ireland." It was sung by Mr. J. Carroll, the pupils of Brother Arnold's Academy joining chorus.

Q. What was the effect ?

A. As the words of the song rolled out from the lips of the singer in slow, mournful, and singularly beautiful tones, the audience rose simultaneously to their feet and caught up the refrain. The effect was magical :— The cheers were long and loud, again and again repeated at the close of each verse.

Q. What was Mr. Parnell's reception in Toronto ?

A. It was, indeed, a magnificent ovation tendered by true and warm *Celtic* hearts to the "uncrowned King of Ireland ;" in which they manifested their

heartfelt sympathy for their suffering brethren in the dear *Old Land*.

Q. Did Mr. Parnell visit the other cities of the Dominion ?

A. No ; he was prevented from doing so by very pressing parliamentary business, which required his immediate presence in Ireland.

Q. What must be remarked ?

A. It must be remarked that Canada was nothing behind her American Sister, in *her* generous contributions to the Irish Relief Fund.

Q. When did Mr. Parnell take his departure from America for Ireland ?

A. On the 11th of March, he sailed from New York for Ireland. Before his departure he again received deputations from the different societies of New York, as also representatives from Philadelphia, Baltimore, Washington, Jersey City, Brooklyn and Newark.

Q. How was Mr. Parnell received by his countrymen on his arrival in Ireland ?

A. By the greatest demonstrations of gratitude. Everywhere he went his countrymen turned out in grand processions, to testify their appreciation of his great merit, and to honor the man who nobly represented their down-trodden country in foreign lands.

Q. What great victory have the Home Rulers obtained lately in Ireland ?

A. They have gained the elections in several

counties, and consequently have added many members to their patriotic band.

Q. What is to be thought of the future prospects of Ireland ?

A. The future prospects of Ireland are cheering. She possesses the same vitality, intellect, and resources that have distinguished her in the past. She has learned much by experience, and her children were never so numerous as at present.

Q. What is on her side ?

A. Right is on her side, her history is being studied, and the sympathies of the world are with her.

Q. What must inevitably take place if the generation rising up be as patriotic as their sires ?

A. No power on earth can keep the "Old Land" in slavery, and she will soon again become prosperous and great, if not entirely free.

Q. What thought comes naturally to mind as we close this last page of our history ?

A. Truly, we must say, after all, Ireland has been fortunate in her woe. Six hundred years of the bloodiest persecutions recorded history, have not been able to rob her of individuality, faith, or nationality.

Q. How has she come forth from her conflicts ?

A. Like the Church whose most faithful child she is, she has come forth victorious from her conflicts, and though bearing on her body the scars of battle and bigotry, and in her hand the broken

wand of national power, still, some rays of her ancient glory and the attraction of defeated right, linger even now upon her majestic brow.

Q. But, is not her sword broken and do not her ancient trophies lie mouldering in the dust ?

A. Yes ; but for all that she is yet a nation—a distinct nation. You may call her subjected, but I deny that she is conquered. You may call her tranquil, but I deny that she is pacified.

Q. What does she still possess ?

A. She still possesses her own characteristics, her own poetry and literature, her own patriotism and eloquence, and, above all, she cherishes still her panting aspirations for freedom, and her old, eternal, implacable hostility towards her arch-enemy, England.

Ah ! Ireland—beautiful land of my own, even strangers have grieved at thy sorrows, and how then shall I forget thee ? Forget thee ? Never ! Ever while there is life will I remember thee.

**THE END.**

# CONTENTS.

---

CHAPTER.		PAGE.
	Preface.....	III
	Introduction.....	V
I	Of the Original Inhabitants of Ireland.....	7
II.	Early Division of Ireland—Her Constitution and Laws.....	10
III.	First Ages.....	13
IV.	Saint Patrick Apostle of Ireland.	17
V.	Saint Patrick is called by the Irish.	21
VI.	Saint Patrick sent as Bishop to Ireland.....	26
VII.	Saint Patrick Preaches Christiani- ty at Tara.....	30
VIII.	The Labors of St. Patrick Among the Irish.....	33
IX.	The Schools of Ireland.....	35
X.	Invasion of Ireland by the Danes.	38
XI.	Defeat of the Danes by Brian Bo- ru.....	43
XII.	King Henry II, of England con- ceives a design of Invading Ireland.....	48
XIII.	The Catholic Council of Athboy.	53
XIV.	The Anglo Norman Invasion.....	57
XV.	King Henry II. lands in Ireland..	61
XVI.	Reign of Henry II. (concluded)..	65
XVII.	The Reigns of Richard I. John and Henry III.....	69
XVIII.	The Reigns of Edward III. and Richard II.....	73
XIX.	Unchristian Laws—Their results.	78
XX.	The Irish Race—The Feudal Sys- tem.....	82
XXI.	The Reigns of Henry VII. and Henry VIII.....	86



<b>XXII.</b>	The Reign of Henry VIII. (continued).....	89
<b>XXIII.</b>	The Reign of Henry VIII. (concluded).....	93
<b>XXIV.</b>	The Reigns of Edward VI. and Queen Mary.....	93
<b>XXV.</b>	The Reign of Elizabeth.....	100
<b>XXVI.</b>	The Reign of Elizabeth, (continued).....	105
<b>XXVII.</b>	The Reign of Elizabeth, (concluded).....	110
<b>XXVIII.</b>	The Reign of James the First.....	114
<b>XXIX.</b>	The Reign of Charles the First..	117
<b>XXX.</b>	The Civil War of 1641.....	121
<b>XXXI.</b>	The Confederation of Kilkenny..	126
<b>XXXII.</b>	Gen. Owen Roe O'Neill lands in Ireland.....	130
<b>XXXIII.</b>	Oliver Cromwell sent to Ireland--Reign of Terror.....	134
<b>XXXIV.</b>	The Reign of Terror (continued)..	139
<b>XXXV.</b>	Charles II. restored to his throne..	143
<b>XXXVI.</b>	The Reign of James the Second..	149
<b>XXXVII.</b>	Struggle between James and William.....	154
<b>XXXVIII.</b>	The Battle of the Boyne—Sieges of Athlone and Limerick....	160
<b>XXXIX.</b>	The Battle of Aughrim.....	171
<b>XL.</b>	Battle of Aughrim (continued)...	179
<b>XLI.</b>	Battle of Aughrim (concluded)...	186
<b>XLII.</b>	The Treaty of Limerick.....	196
<b>XLIII.</b>	The Reign of William and Mary (concluded).....	202
<b>XLIV.</b>	The Reign of Queen Anne.....	210
<b>XLV.</b>	The Reign of Anne (concluded)..	215
<b>XLVI.</b>	The Reign of George the First....	223
<b>XLVII.</b>	The Reign of George I. (concluded).....	229
<b>XLVIII.</b>	The Reign of George the Second..	233

CONTENTS.

409

89	XLIX.	Reign of George II. (continued)..	239
	L.	Reign of George II. (concluded)..	245
93	LI.	The Reign of George the Third..	250
	LII.	Reign of George III. (continued)..	256
93	LIII.	The Irish Volunteers.....	263
100	LIV.	The Volunteer Convention at Dungannon.....	272
	LV.	Fitzwilliam's Administration— Grattan's Leadership.....	277
105	LVI.	Coercion and Anarchy.....	282
	LVII.	The Insurrection of 1798.....	288
110	LVIII.	Pitch Caps, Flogging, Picketing and Strangulation.....	293
114	LIX.	The Insurrection of 1798, (contin- ued).....	298
117	LX.	The Battle of Oulart Hill.....	303
121	LXI	The Battle of Vinegar Hill—The Ulster Rising.....	310
126	LXII.	The Rising in Connaught—The French land at Killala.....	319
	LXIII.	The Reign of George III. (con- cluded).....	327
130	LXIV.	Reigns of George IV. and William IV. O'Connell's Leadership..	334
	LXV.	Reign of Queen Victoria.....	344
134	LXVI.	Attempt at Insurrection in 1843..	349
139	LXVII.	The fate of the Leaders of '48....	358
143	LXVIII.	Father Mathew.....	361
149	LXIX.	The Irish Evictions.....	368
	LXX.	Fenian Brotherhood.....	371
154	LXXI.	The Arrest of James Stephens, his trial and escape.....	376
160	LXXII.	Home Rule.....	381
171	LXXIII.	The National Land League.....	387
177	LXXIV.	Charles S. Parnell visits America —His Reception.....	394
186			
196			
202			
210			
215			
223			
229			
233			

